



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

16446 English MSS 1000 fol 240012

3229

SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY  
PAPERS

16446

ENGLISH

READINGS FOR

SCHOOLS

Harvard College Library



LIBRARY OF THE  
DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION

COLLECTION OF TEXT-BOOKS  
CONTRIBUTED BY THE PUBLISHERS

TRANSFERRED

TO

HARV



"On bokès for  
to rede I me  
delyte."

*Chaucer.*



# **English Readings for Schools**

**GENERAL EDITOR**

**WILBUR LUCIUS CROSS**

**PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN YALE UNIVERSITY**









**Joseph Addison**  
**From the painting by Kraemer**

THE  
SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY  
PAPERS

FROM  
THE SPECTATOR

EDITED BY  
NATHANIEL EDWARD GRIFFIN  
ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH, PRINCETON UNIVERSITY



NEW YORK  
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY  
1914

**JUN 28 1915**

TRANSFERRED TO  
HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY

16446.32.29

✓

**COPYRIGHT, 1914,**  
**BY**  
**HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY**

THE QUINN & BODEN CO. PRESS  
RAHWAY, N. J.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	
I. STEELE AND ADDISON . . . . .	vii
II. THE TATLER AND THE SPECTATOR . . . . .	xv
III. THE SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY PAPERS . . . . .	xxiii
DESCRIPTIVE BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .	xxix

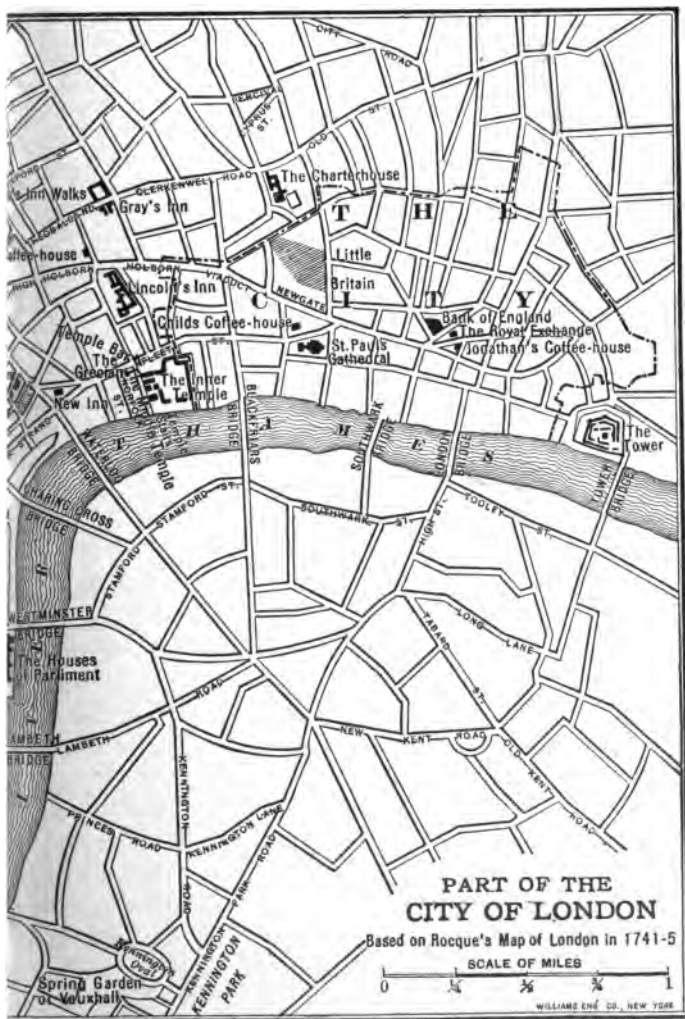
## SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY PAPERS

Mr. Spectator . . . . .	3
The Club . . . . .	7
Mr. Spectator at His Club . . . . .	14
A Lady's Library . . . . .	18
Pedantry . . . . .	23
Coverley Hall . . . . .	26
The Coverley Servants . . . . .	30
Will Wimble . . . . .	34
The Coverley Portraits . . . . .	38
The Coverley Ghost . . . . .	42
Sunday with Sir Roger . . . . .	47
Sir Roger in Love . . . . .	50
Sir Roger Goes A-Hunting . . . . .	56
The Coverley Witch . . . . .	62
Sir Roger Talks of the Widow . . . . .	66
Town and Country Manners . . . . .	70
Sir Roger at the Assizes . . . . .	74
Eudoxus and Leontine . . . . .	78
The Evils of Party Spirit . . . . .	83
The Evils of Party Spirit— <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	88
Sir Roger and the Gipsies . . . . .	92

	PAGE
Mr. Spectator Decides to Return to London . . . . .	96
The Journey to London . . . . .	99
Sir Roger and Sir Andrew in Argument . . . . .	103
Sir Roger Visits London . . . . .	108
Pin-Money . . . . .	112
Sir Roger in Westminster Abbey . . . . .	117
Sir Roger upon Beards . . . . .	121
Sir Roger at the Play . . . . .	124
Will Honeycomb and the Ladies . . . . .	129
Sir Roger at Vauxhall . . . . .	132
Death of Sir Roger . . . . .	136
NOTES AND COMMENT . . . . .	141
Portrait of Addison . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Map of London . . . . .	vii
Portrait of Steele . . . . .	2



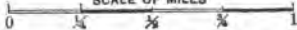




# PART OF THE CITY OF LONDON

Based on Rocque's Map of London in 1741-5

SCALE OF MILES



WILLIAMS AND CO., NEW YORK



we  
Str  
16  
sar  
tai  
ea  
di  
B  
w  
m  
ir  
se  
tl  
tr  
a  
a  
s  
s  
l  
l  
l

# INTRODUCTION

## I

### STEELE AND ADDISON

THE future authors of the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers* were born within two months of one another; Richard Steele, the elder, having first seen the light on March 12, 1672, and Joseph Addison, the younger, on May 1 of the same year.

Steele and Addison first became acquainted at the famous Charterhouse School in London. Previous to this early meeting, the fortunes of the two boys had been quite different. Steele had had much sorrow to contend with. Before the age of five he had lost his father, and he afterwards gives in the *Tatler* a very touching picture of his mother's frantic efforts to restrain him from vainly beating with his battledore on his father's coffin. That mother soon followed her husband to the grave, and it was through the generosity of an uncle that Steele was sent to the Charterhouse. Addison, on the other hand, had always enjoyed the fostering care of father and mother in an exceptionally happy and harmonious household. To share these domestic blessings with his less fortunate schoolmate, Addison would often bring Steele home with him for the holidays. These visits led to a strong attachment between the orphan boy and the several members of the Addison family. Steele afterwards writes that the elder Addison pronounced a "blessing on the friendship

between his son and me," and gives in the *Tatler* a delightful sketch of the home circle of his kindly benefactors.

But the friendship thus early begun between the two schoolmates was not destined to bear immediate fruit. It was not until many years after these Charterhouse days that Steele and Addison again met to form that memorable literary partnership that resulted in the production of the *Tatler* and the *Spectator*. In the meantime, the paths of the two friends diverged, and it was, as we shall see, only a common passion for letters that again drew them together in these joint literary enterprises.

Addison, though younger than Steele, preceded his schoolfellow from the Charterhouse to Oxford, where he entered Queen's College at the early age of fifteen. Some good Latin verses soon brought him a fellowship at Magdalen College, where he spent the remaining years of his Oxford life. With Magdalen the name of Addison is inseparably linked, a deeply shaded pathway on the college grounds being still pointed out as "Addison's Walk." The brilliant promise of the young man's literary performances soon attracted the attention of the outside world, and he was dissuaded from an early intention of entering the church by a government pension of £300 to enable him to prepare for public life by a tour on the Continent.

After four years of foreign travel, during which he surprised the famous French critic Boileau by his skill in Latin verse, Addison returned to England in time to celebrate the victory of Marlborough at Blenheim in an English poem entitled the *Campaign*. In those days a man's fortune was not infrequently made by the commemoration of some public event in prose or verse, and

this timely tribute to the prowess of a great national hero at once opened for Addison the door to political preferment. In return for the *Campaign* and other poems in praise of the Whigs, Addison received a number of public appointments, eventually culminating in the office of Secretary of State, the highest political reward ever granted to an English man of letters.

It was while in Ireland, as secretary to the Lord Lieutenant of that country, that Addison made the chance discovery that finally determined the main trend of his future activities. He there ran across an early number of a famous periodical that Steele had recently launched under the name of the *Tatler*. In this enterprise Addison at once perceived a congenial field for the exercise of his own peculiar talents, and soon joined his former school-fellow in the composition of the remaining portion of the *Tatler* and of the whole of the *Spectator*.

In the meantime, Steele had followed Addison from the Charterhouse to Oxford, where he entered "Christ Church" College. Within two years he was transferred by the intercession of friends to a scholarship at Merton College. But, unlike Addison, Steele did not take kindly to books, and after two years at Merton he abandoned the studious life of the cloister for the stirring life of the camp. Enlisting as a private in Lord Ormond's "Horse Guards," he rose in the course of a few years to the dignity of captain in Lord Lucas's Regiment of Foot. Young "Captain Dick," as he was familiarly called, entered with zest upon the life of a soldier, at once recommending himself to his brother officers by a natural love of conviviality and good fellowship. But becoming aware, as time went on, of the dangers that lurked beneath the

superficial glitter of military life, Steele composed a little treatise entitled the *Christian Hero*. This pious effusion, written, says the author, "to strengthen my moral principles," was relished but little by his less scrupulous companions, and so, in order "to enliven his character," he wrote a comedy under the strangely lugubrious title of the *Funeral*. This comedy, which, in spite of the title, contained a number of humorous passages, was performed before a full attendance of the author's fellow-soldiers and scored a marked success. The *Funeral* was soon followed by two more comedies, the *Lying Lover* and the *Tender Husband*. These last two comedies, however, were more like sermons than plays, and failed more or less completely on the stage. But in spite of these failures, Steele gradually came to the conclusion that he was better fitted to be an author than a soldier, and it was not long before he abandoned the sword for the pen.

The motives that led Steele to begin the *Tatler* cannot be determined with certainty. No doubt the desire to continue in a new type of literature the moral reforms which he had attempted in his plays was the main motive. Moreover, Steele had recently been appointed Gazetteer to the government; and the appearance in the earlier numbers of the *Tatler* of the latest items of news seems to indicate that the opportunity to make literary capital out of his official position may have operated as a secondary inducement.

The *Tatler*, of which Steele thus became the founder and to which, after the accession of Addison, he remained the chief contributor, ran for a period of a little more than a year and a half. It was succeeded, after an interval of two months, by the *Spectator*, which continued to

occupy the joint attention of the two friends for a slightly longer period. These two periodicals, undertaken at a time when Steele and Addison had entered upon the full maturity of their powers, present the two authors at their best. The *Tatler* and the *Spectator* at once captivated the town and they have since continued to delight an ever-widening circle of readers.

After the termination of the *Spectator*, each author started, independently of the other, a variety of other periodicals, which were short-lived and of little importance. In but few instances did they again contribute conjointly to the same paper. One of these papers was the *Guardian*. But before long Steele was led by an increasing interest in party politics to abandon the *Guardian*, and henceforth all further opportunity for a revival of the partnership which had produced the *Tatler* and the *Spectator* was brought to a conclusion.

From this time forth various causes contributed to bring about a decline in the cordial relations which had hitherto subsisted between Steele and Addison. For one thing, Addison, though a stanch Whig, had endeavored to keep the *Spectator* out of politics, whereas Steele had shown a marked propensity to break forth "into the outrages of party" on the slightest provocation. To facilitate harmonious coöperation in the conduct of the *Spectator*, Addison had been willing to overlook this fault in his friend; but after the discontinuance of that periodical, he no longer hesitated to express open disapproval of Steele's over-zealous partisanship.

Furthermore, there was a fundamental difference in temperament between Steele and Addison, and this temperamental difference tended, as time went on, to draw

the two men further and further apart. Steele inherited from an Irish mother a reckless, improvident disposition, which constantly betrayed him into acts of indiscretion. Consequently, although by profession a moralist and by nature one of the best-intentioned men in the world, he often found it hard to practise what he preached, and spent no inconsiderable part of his life "in sinning and repenting; in inculcating what was right and doing what was wrong." Addison, on the other hand, had inherited from well-bred English parents the happy faculty of regulating his behavior by the strictest rules of propriety and decorum and, as a result, not infrequently found it difficult to tolerate in his friend irregularities to which he was himself a stranger. It is related, for example, that Addison once lent Steele £1,000, accepting as security a mortgage on Steele's house, and that, becoming provoked at slowness of payment, he sold the house, deducted the amount of his loan, and sent the balance to Steele in order, as he expressed it, "to awaken his friend from a lethargy that must end in his inevitable ruin." But Steele was not the only one at fault. Addison likewise had defects that were often quite as irritating as those of his friend. Chief among these, as the foregoing anecdote illustrates, was a too frequent tendency to assume an air of conscious superiority towards those whom he regarded as his moral or intellectual inferiors. This disposition was characterized by Pope with a touch of malicious exaggeration when he describes Addison as one who would

"Damn with faint praise, assent with civil leer,  
And, without sneering, teach the rest to sneer."

This was, naturally, of all possible traits that least cal-

culated to conciliate a man of Steele's generous nature and ready sympathies.

Furthermore, the conjugal relations of Steele and Addison tended still further to separate them. Steele, in accordance with his less cautious nature, was the first to embark upon the uncertain seas of matrimony. Having lost his first wife eighteen months after marriage, he chose as his second helpmate, Mary Scurlock, a Welsh beauty and heiress of a considerable fortune. Swift's ungallant reference to Mrs. Steele as "Addison's rival" shows only too clearly that Addison felt himself relegated by this event to a secondary place in his friend's affection. Moreover, Mrs. Steele was a lady of a somewhat imperious disposition, and a constant succession of domestic jars attended her efforts to control her wayward spouse. These quarrels between husband and wife—which, with his usual thoughtlessness, Steele took no pains to conceal from the world—can hardly have failed to irritate a man of Addison's refined sensibilities and excessive regard for the conventional proprieties. Addison, on the other hand, displayed his customary prudence by not marrying until late in life. He then contracted a dignified alliance with the rich and somewhat elderly Dowager Countess of Warwick. But, as fate would have it, Addison's conjugal precautions proved even less successful than Steele's more precipitate venture. In spite of outward appearances to the contrary, Steele was devotedly attached to Mary Scurlock and refers to her death as "the severest blow of my life." Addison, on the contrary, if we may credit contemporary gossip, married "discord in a noble wife," and it was currently rumored that the spacious mansion of Holland House was too small to hold "Addison, his



Countess, and one guest Peace." But, unlike Steele, Addison had too much pride to expose his domestic difficulties to public view, and the effort to suppress them tended only to strengthen those habits of austere reserve which had always proved repellent to his warm-hearted friends.

The alienation between Addison and Steele at length reached a climax on the occasion of Lord Sunderland's Peerage Bill. This measure, designed to strengthen the House of Lords by depriving the king of the right to create an unlimited number of new peers, was supported by Addison and opposed by Steele. In a series of papers, contributed respectively by Steele to the *Plebeian* and by Addison to the *Old Whig*, the question between the two was warmly but respectfully debated. Soon after the last gun had been fired in this pamphlet warfare, Addison breathed his last, on June 17, 1719. Steele survived Addison until September 1, 1729, but without the stimulating presence of his friend produced no further work of importance.

It must ever remain a source of deep regret to the admirers of Steele and Addison that men who had so much in common should have allowed superficial differences to separate them. While it may appear invidious to blame either author for what in the nature of the case seems to have been inevitable, it must nevertheless be confessed that Addison was more often to blame than Steele. The latter was by temperament more ready to forgive and forget than the former. Moreover, before the estrangement, Steele had repeatedly paid generous tribute to the genius of Addison. Thus in the final number of the *Tatler*, he credits his friend with "the finest strokes

of wit and humor" in that periodical, and in the last number of the *Spectator* not only acknowledges that Addison contributed "many applauded strokes" to the *Tender Husband*, but also expressed the hope that "we [may] some time or other publish a work, written by us both, which [shall] bear the name of the *Monument*, in memory of our friendship." To words of such unstinted praise Addison had at no time replied in kind. We may, however, be permitted to conjecture that he may have secretly cherished kindlier feelings towards Steele than his habitual reticence would allow him to express. Such, at any rate, is the inference we may draw from the noble words with which he closes a memorable paper upon Westminster Abbey. "When," he writes, "I see kings lying by those who deposed them, when I consider rival wits placed side by side, or the holy men who divided the world with their contests and disputes, I reflect with sorrow and astonishment on the little competitions, factions, and debates of mankind."

## II

## THE TATLER AND THE SPECTATOR

The age in which Steele and Addison lived differed very much from that in which we live to-day. Though proud of its reputation for politeness, it was, for the most part, an age of looseness in public and private life, of insincerity and superficiality, of worldliness and lack of spirituality. A pleasure-loving public devoted a large part of its time to an endless round of unprofitable gaieties. The theater, the gaming-table, and the fashions preoccupied

the attention of society to the exclusion of the more serious concerns of religion and morality. A minute acquaintance with the sprightly and none too respectable plays of the day, at which ladies not infrequently found it desirable to appear in masks, the ability to win or lose heavily at cards without betraying emotion and to discharge promptly a debt of honor, the exhibition of nice discrimination in the choice of snuff-box or gold-headed cane or in the regulation of such important particulars as the height of a head-dress, the swell of the petticoat, or the proper distribution of patches to rescue a grace or hide a blemish—such were a few of the polite accomplishments of the day. The fine gentleman took a morning stroll in the Mall, breakfasted at a coffee-house, gossiped at the club until early afternoon, dined at a tavern, gossiped again at the club or coffee-house, and spent the evening at the play or gaming-table, with supper afterwards. The lady of fashion stayed in bed until noon, devoted the greater portion of the afternoon to dress, took a drive in the park, and then spent her evening at cards, the theater, or the masquerade ball. To check the spread of these fashionable excesses, Steele established the *Tatler*. In it he undertook to “expose the false arts of life, to pull off the disguises of cunning, vanity, and affectation, and to recommend a general simplicity in our dress, our discourse, and our behavior.”

The *Tatler* was not, as is sometimes supposed, the first English newspaper. That distinction belongs to the *Weekly News from Italy and Germanie*, which was established in 1622. It was not until the English newspaper had come to include domestic as well as foreign intelligence, to appear daily as well as weekly, and to be repre-

sented not by one single publication but by many, that Steele began the *Tatler*. The fame of that periodical is due, therefore, not to its priority as a news sheet, but to the special function which it undertook to discharge in the service of morality. Hitherto the English journal had been devoted almost exclusively to news pure and simple. One writer only had attempted to broaden its scope by introducing moral comment and social satire as well. That writer was the novelist, Daniel Defoe, who, in a monthly supplement to his *Review*, entitled the "Scandal Club," had undertaken to express his views on questions of conduct and behavior. But by using too harsh methods of satire, Defoe failed to gain the goodwill of the public, and the *Review* ended without accomplishing the reforms aimed at by the author. Steele, on the contrary, employed a milder method of procedure, and thus succeeded in accomplishing the task which his able but less tactful predecessor had been obliged to relinquish.

The first number of the *Tatler*—named by Steele "in honor of the fair sex"—appeared on April 12, 1709, and henceforth the new journal was issued three times a week. With the exception of the first four numbers, which were distributed gratis, the price of the *Tatler* was one penny. The paper consisted of a single sheet, printed in double columns, the last column being left blank for the insertion of the latest news in manuscript. The paper and the presswork of the *Tatler* would not be tolerated to-day and even at that time evoked the complaint of "tobacco paper" and "scurvy-letter" from an injured correspondent. The majority of the first eighty papers bear the following motto:

“Quicquid agunt homines——  
Nostri est farrago libelli.”

JUVENAL, *Satire I*, verses 85-86.

“Whate’er men do, or say, or think, or dream,  
Our motley paper seizes for its theme.”

POPE.

Later this motto was either changed to another or else the motto was omitted altogether.

In order to escape personal responsibility for the opinions he expressed as social censor, Steele represented the *Tatler* as the work of an imaginary character known as Isaac Bickerstaff. This name he borrowed from his friend Swift, who had used it as nom de plume in three humorous pamphlets written to demolish the astronomical pretensions of a certain quack almanac-maker named Partridge. In the first of these pamphlets Swift predicted the exact hour of Partridge’s death, and in the second and third boldly proclaimed the fulfilment of his prophecy, much to the dismay of the discomfited almanac-maker, who stoutly maintained that he was still alive. By providing that all contributions to the *Tatler* should be written under a name “rendered famous through all parts of Europe” by the success which at once attended the publication of this clever hoax, Steele succeeded not only in availing himself of the popular interest already aroused by the publication of Swift’s pamphlets, but also in imparting to the *Tatler* a comic tone well suited to effect the moral reforms which he sought to accomplish. Moreover, the adoption of Isaac Bickerstaff as the central figure in the *Tatler* served to bind all the papers in that periodical into a unified and harmonious whole. Furthermore, in order to prevent Mr. Bickerstaff’s observations

from growing monotonous, Steele represents that gentleman as writing his papers from a variety of different coffee-houses and as varying the topic of his discourse to suit the character of the conversation heard at each. Thus Mr. Bickerstaff writes all accounts of gallantry from White's, of poetry from Will's, of learning from the Grecian, and of news from St. James's. "What else," he adds, "I have to offer on any subject shall be written from my own apartment."

Although Steele invented the design of the *Tatler*, assumed entire editorial responsibility for its conduct, and wrote with his own hand the larger part of its contents, he nevertheless received, as time went on, very material assistance from Addison. Steele had begun the *Tatler* without the knowledge of his friend, but in an early number Addison recognized Steele's hand in a Virgilian quotation he had once given him, and it was not long before he, too, became a regular contributor. Under Addison's influence, the somewhat tedious items of news, which had previously constituted about one-third of each *Tatler*, were now gradually abandoned and each paper came to be devoted exclusively to moral comment and social satire. Addison also wrote for the *Tatler* a number of papers distinguished by a delicacy of humor and a breadth of observation beyond the reach of Steele, who afterwards said of the assistance his friend had given him: "I fared like a distressed prince who calls in a powerful neighbor to his aid; I was undone by my auxiliary; when I had once called him in, I could not subsist without dependence on him."

Having run to the number of two hundred and seventy-one papers, the *Tatler* came to an abrupt conclusion on

January 2, 1711. Although Steele states that he has discontinued the *Tatler* because Mr. Bickerstaff's identity has been discovered, it seems more probable that he was led to this step partly from a sense that the paper had outlived its novelty and partly from a desire to start a new periodical to be planned and conducted conjointly with Addison.

The *Spectator* first appeared on March 1, 1711, and, unlike the *Tatler*, was issued daily, Sundays excepted. The price of the new journal was at first one penny, but this price was afterwards raised to two pence on account of a stamp tax imposed by the government. In form the *Spectator* closely resembled the *Tatler*, save that it contained different mottoes at the head of each paper, and omitted the news items at the end.

In the *Spectator* Steele and Addison undertook to carry on the same crusade against folly and extravagance that Steele had already begun in the *Tatler*. To accomplish this object the two friends contrived a design very similar to that of the *Tatler*. In place of the imaginary Mr. Bickerstaff, they substitute, as a central and unifying figure, an equally imaginary Mr. Spectator, under whose signature all contributions to the new periodical are written. Similarly, in place of the different coffee-house addresses by which Mr. Bickerstaff had sought to diversify his observations, Mr. Spectator is provided with certain club associates who engage him in discussions that relate to their respective interests. In actual execution, however, only the first part of this program was carried out with any approach to consistency. For, whereas Mr. Spectator uniformly appears as the imaginary author of each paper, that gentleman more often parts company with his club

associates and discusses subjects suggested neither by them nor by the interests which they represent. Only in that small group of papers which concern Sir Roger de Coverley, his chief club associate, is Mr. Spectator brought at all frequently into relation with the several members of his club. Elsewhere he almost invariably proceeds, without the aid of these gentlemen, to express his own independent views on a variety of different topics, literary as well as social and moral.

The *Spectator* ran to the number of five hundred and fifty-five papers, and appeared for the last time on December 6, 1712. In the final numbers appear remonstrances from interested readers who are supposed to divine the approaching termination of the paper. The members of a certain club write: "We cannot without sorrow reflect that we are likely to have nothing to interrupt our sips in the morning, and to suspend our coffee in mid-air between our lips and right ear, but the ordinary trash of newspapers." And well might they lament! For the *Spectator* had come to be regarded as a no less important adjunct to the domestic library than the almanac or family Bible. It was brought to Queen Anne every morning for breakfast and read by all classes of her subjects either with the "tea" served at that meal or with a "morning pipe of tobacco" afterwards. At times it reached a daily circulation of 20,000 copies, and it finally made its way as far as the Scotch Highlands. Two years after the termination of the *Spectator*, Addison undertook, without the aid of Steele, to revive that periodical. This second issue of the *Spectator* ran only to the number of eighty papers and is, in comparison with the first, of minor importance. After the discontinuance of this second series



of *Spectators*, the daily numbers of both series were bound in eight volumes and translated into French, German, Italian, Russian, and many other languages of Europe.

The *Tatler* reflects more particularly the genius of Steele, by whom it was planned and largely written; the *Spectator*, that of Addison, by whom, more largely than by Steele, it was both planned and written. Whether one prefers the *Tatler* or the *Spectator*, therefore, will depend upon whether one prefers Steele or Addison. To maintain that either of these two authors is inherently superior to the other would be a claim invidious to propose and difficult to substantiate. Each author has his own particular virtues and his own particular limitations, and in choosing between the two, much must depend upon the taste of the chooser. In general, it may be said that Steele owes more to nature, Addison more to art. The former excels in the dramatic delineation of the world of everyday life, the latter in the idealistic representation of a world constructed by the imagination. Again, Steele addresses himself mainly to the emotions of the reader, and aims by simple and natural means to excite laughter or tears; Addison makes his appeal primarily to the intellect, and endeavors by an ingenious juxtaposition of incongruous ideas to provoke a sense of the ridiculous. Finally, Steele is at constant pains to point a useful but somewhat obvious moral, whereas Addison seeks to accomplish social betterment by the indirect means of satire and irony. Thus the gifts of Steele serve admirably to supplement the gifts of Addison, and no part of the *Spectator* possesses greater charm or vitality than that in which the two authors, uniting forces in a joint effort to execute a common de-

sign, produced that masterly series of papers known as the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers*.

### III

#### THE SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY PAPERS

As already stated, the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers* is the title given to those *Spectator* papers in which Steele and Addison carry out their original design of representing Mr. Spectator as the member of a club. These papers might therefore equally well be named *Mr. Spectator and his Club* and in at least one edition they actually are so named. But since the papers in question have more to say of Sir Roger than of any other member of Mr. Spectator's club, it seems better to give them the simpler and more usual title of the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers*.

The *Sir Roger Papers* form, it should be remembered, but a small proportion of the total number of papers of which the *Spectator* consists. These papers, moreover, do not follow one another in an unbroken sequence but lie scattered at irregular intervals throughout the *Spectator*. Thus, as general introduction to the *de Coverley Papers*, stand the first two numbers of the *Spectator*. In the first number, which is dated March 1, 1711, Mr. Spectator makes his bow to the reader and in the second, dated March 2, 1711, he introduces his club associates. A period of more than a month's silence then follows in which Mr. Spectator makes but rare and incidental references to his associates. At length in *Spectator* No. 34, dated April 9, 1711, a club meeting is described

at which Mr. Spectator receives suggestions from his associates as to the editorial policy which he shall follow in the ensuing numbers of his journal. We are thus led to expect him to call frequently upon his club associates for assistance in the remaining portion of his periodical. But in this we are disappointed, for, with rare exceptions, we hear nothing further of these gentlemen for a space of nearly four months. Two important exceptions occur in the papers entitled *A Lady's Library* (No. 37) and *Pedantry* (No. 105), in which passing allusion is made to Sir Roger and to Will Honeycomb respectively. At length in *Spectator* No. 106 we unexpectedly find Mr. Spectator a guest at Sir Roger's country estate of Coverley Hall. This paper, which bears the date of July 2, 1711, opens a more or less uninterrupted series of eighteen papers which describe the various pursuits in which Mr. Spectator finds Sir Roger engaged in the country. In the last paper of the series (No. 132), which is dated July 31, 1711, Mr. Spectator returns to London. Thereupon a third interval of over five months' silence ensues, in which, with the exception of an argument between Sir Roger and Sir Andrew, related in No. 174, we again lose sight of Mr. Spectator's club associates. At length in *Spectator* No. 269, dated January 8, 1712, Sir Roger pays Mr. Spectator a return visit in London. This paper opens a series of seven *Spectators* devoted, with the single exception of a paper on *Pin-Money* (No. 295), to Sir Roger's experiences in the metropolis. The series ends with an account of Sir Roger's visit to Vauxhall in *Spectator* No. 383. Since this *Spectator* is dated May 20, 1712, Sir Roger remains more than four months in town. Finally, after a fourth interval of silence, during

which, save in the case of a single paper not included in this edition, we again hear but little further of Mr. Spectator's club associates, we suddenly learn, in *Spectator* No. 517, of Sir Roger's death at Coverley Hall, whither, we are left to infer, he has returned in the interim. With this paper, dated October 23, 1712, and written more than a year and a half after Sir Roger's first introduction to the reader, the entire series is brought to an abrupt conclusion.

From the foregoing analysis we see that Sir Roger occupies a position of much greater prominence at the end of the *de Coverley* series than he does at the beginning. In the first five papers of the series, Steele and Addison pay no more attention to Sir Roger than to any other member of the club. It is not until Mr. Spectator appears as a guest at Coverley Hall that Sir Roger first merges into conspicuous prominence. From that point to the end of the series he holds the center of the stage. Henceforth the other members of Mr. Spectator's club are relegated to positions of subordinate importance and when, at last, Sir Roger dies, these members disperse and the club disbands.

The instinct that led Steele and Addison to exalt Sir Roger above his fellows was a sound one. In the first five *de Coverley* papers no one member of the club enjoys a position of superiority over any other member. They all stand on the same level. The reason for this is obvious. As appears from the description contained in the second and third papers, all these members were originally intended to figure as typical representatives of the several classes of society to which they respectively belong. But since individuals are more interesting than abstract

types, Steele and Addison soon conceived the idea of lifting one of these gentlemen above the artificial limitations imposed by class and of describing him as a unique human personality interesting on his own account and not merely on account of the particular station in life which he happens to occupy. Of the several classes represented in Mr. Spectator's club, the old-fashioned, conservative class of landed gentry contained, no doubt, the largest number of curious, whimsical personalities. It was, apparently, for this reason that Steele and Addison selected Sir Roger de Coverley for individual characterization. Accordingly, in the papers that open with Mr. Spectator's appearance at Coverley Hall, what interests us most is not that Sir Roger goes to church on Sunday, rides to hounds, and serves as justice of the peace. These are pursuits in which we should expect any country squire to engage as a matter of course. What interests us most are those little singularities of deportment which hold Sir Roger apart from other country squires and put him in a class by himself. The good knight's praise of the gallant ancestor who narrowly escaped death at the battle of Worcester, his habit of standing up in church to count his tenants, his awkward behavior in the presence of the "perverse widow," his thought of the fine tobacco-stopper that might be carved from the coronation chair of Edward the Second, his surprise to discover that tragic actors sometimes talk to be understood—these and a score of other peculiarities distinguish Sir Roger as an individual from other members of his class.

Had Steele and Addison extended this method of individual characterization from Sir Roger to Mr. Spectator's other associates, we might then be able to dignify the *Sir*

## The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers xxvii

*Roger de Coverley Papers* with the appellation of our first English novel. One of the most noticeable characteristics of the little narrative unfolded in these papers, is that it lacks movement and progress. Sir Roger is a stationary character. He neither acts nor is he acted upon. He remains at the end of the series precisely the same sort of a person that he was at the beginning. Nothing happens to alter or change the even tenor of his existence. Once, to be sure, he had a love affair with the "perverse" widow. But we may be permitted to doubt, despite his own assertions to the contrary, whether that event had ever colored his life or character to any considerable extent. It had, at any rate, long ceased to have any such effect by the time that we first meet him.

Now this evident lack of progress in the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers* is due to the absence of any second figure commensurate in importance to Sir Roger. The *de Coverley Papers* contain but a single life-like portrait. They lack the variety and diversity of character that we find, for example, in a novel of Dickens. Sir Roger stands upon a solitary eminence. He has no equals with whom he can be brought into relations of enmity or friendship, of sympathy or antipathy. In default of such equals, there is no chance for a contrariety of interests, a clash of personalities, for the species of dramatic conflict we call plot. Without a plot we can have no novel and the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers* lack a plot. These papers, accordingly, may most fittingly be designated as a series of loosely connected scenes illustrative of the life of a singularly fascinating individual by the name of Sir Roger de Coverley. They are descriptive rather than dramatic, and have no further object

than to picture Sir Roger in precisely the same way that the portraits in the good knight's own picture gallery picture his ancestors.

But while the *Sir Roger de Coverley Papers* fail to meet the requirements of the novel, they may nevertheless be said to contain the germ out of which the novel afterwards evolved. No English writer, prior to Steele and Addison, had ever drawn so life-like a portrait as that of Sir Roger. To develop the novel it remained only for some future author to devise a group or collection of equally well executed characters and to engage them in that consecutive chain of closely related events that we call plot. This task was performed later in the eighteenth century by Richardson, Fielding, and Smollett.

It may be unnecessary to add that the separate *de Coverley Papers* bear no titles in the early editions of the *Spectator*, being supplied by later editors.

# DESCRIPTIVE BIBLIOGRAPHY

## I

### STEELE

BRIEF sketches of Steele's life occur in G. A. Aitken's essay prefixed to his edition of Steele's *Plays* (the Mermaid Series, Charles Scribner's Sons, New York, 1894), and in G. R. Carpenter's *Introduction to Selections from Steele* (the Athenæum Press, Ginn & Co., Boston, 1897). A longer life is Austin Dobson's *Richard Steele* (Appleton & Co., New York, 1886). The fullest biography is G. A. Aitken's *Life of Richard Steele* (two volumes, the Riverside Press, Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston, 1889).

Incidental comments upon the character of Steele are made by Johnson in his life of Addison in *Lives of the Poets*, first published in 1781, and by Macaulay in his essay on Addison, first published in the *Edinburgh Review* in 1843. Both biographers are led, however, by superior interest in Addison to underrate Steele. Macaulay, in particular, is inclined to regard Addison as a paragon of all the virtues and to picture Steele as in all respects his direct antithesis. Less harsh but equally unfair to Steele is Thackeray, who has given us two brilliant portraits of that author—one in the eleventh chapter of the second book of *Henry Esmond*, first published in 1852, and the other in his essay on Steele in the *English Humorists of the Eighteenth Century*, first published in 1853. By lay-



ing too much stress upon Steele's temperamental weaknesses Thackeray pictures that author as one who deserves pity rather than respect or admiration. At length John Forster pays a tardy tribute of justice to Steele in an essay contributed to the *Quarterly Review* in 1855. Though anxious to vindicate Steele's character from the misconstructions of early writers, Forster makes no attempt to condone or to extenuate his faults. For this reason Forster's essay probably furnishes the fairest estimate of Steele's character that we possess.

No complete edition of Steele's numerous works has ever been published. His letters are published by John Nichols, two volumes, London, 1787, and his plays by G. A. Aitken in the volume referred to above. No complete set of Steele's contributions to the *Tatler* and *Spectator* has ever been published apart from Addison's contributions. Selections from Steele's contributions to both these periodicals are published by Austin Dobson (Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1896), and by G. R. Carpenter in the volume noted above.

#### LIST OF STEELE'S MORE IMPORTANT WORKS

1695. *The Procession. A Poem on Her Majesties Funeral. By a gentleman of the Army.*

An elegy on the death of Queen Mary. Mary died on December 28, 1694, and the elegy was published on March 19, 1695.

1701. *The Christian Hero: An Argument proving that No Principles but those of Religion are sufficient to make a Great Man.*

A pious tract, said to have been written as the result of a duel which Steele fought in Hyde Park with a certain Captain Kelly on June 16, 1700. The tract is in prose and was published on April 15, 1701.

1701. *The Funeral: Or, Grief-à-la-Mode. A Comedy.*

Acted with great success at Drury Lane Theater in the autumn of 1701, and published on December 18, of the same year. The success of the play caused the name of the author to be inscribed, as he himself tells us, "in the last Table Book ever worn by the glorious and immortal William the Third."

1703. *The Lying Lover: Or, the Ladies' friendship. A Comedy.*

Acted with but little success at Drury Lane Theater on December 2, 1703, and published on January 26 of the following year. The play contains a dueling scene and may therefore, like the *Christian Hero*, have been suggested by the duel with Kelly.

1705. *The Tender Husband: Or, the Accomplish'd Fools. A Comedy.*

Acted with moderate success at Drury Lane Theater on April 23, 1705, and published on May 9 of the same year. The prologue and certain scenes were written by Addison, to whom the play was dedicated.

1709-1711. *The Tatler.*

The *Tatler* appeared for the first time on April 12, 1709, and continued to appear every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday until January 2, 1711. It ran to the number of 271 papers, of which Steele wrote 188, Addison 41, and Steele and Addison conjointly 34. Among other contributors was Swift.

1711-1712. *The Spectator.*

The *Spectator* appeared for the first time on March 1, 1711, and continued to appear every week day until December 6, 1712. It ran to the number of 555 papers, of which Addison wrote 274 and Steele 236. Among other contributors was Budgell.

1713. *The Guardian.*

The *Guardian* was originally projected by Steele as a purely literary sheet but, as time went on, it came to assume a political character. It was first published on March 12, 1713, and continued to appear every week day until October 1 of the same year. The periodical ran to the number of 175 papers, of which Steele contributed 82. Among other contributors were Addison and Pope.

1714. *The Crisis: Or, a Discourse representing . . . the just causes of the late Happy Revolution . . . with some Seasonable Remarks on the Danger of a Popish Successor.*

A Whig pamphlet written in support of the Protestant Succession and published on January 19, 1714. The publication of this pamphlet led Steele into a quarrel with Swift. Swift replied to the *Crisis* in a famous pamphlet entitled the *Public Spirit of the Whigs*, and Steele made a counter reply in a periodical entitled the *Englishman* on February 15, 1714. As a result of this defense of Whig principles, Steele was expelled from the House of Commons on March 18, 1714.

1714. *Mr. Steele's Apology for Himself and his Writings; Occasion'd by his Expulsion from the House of Commons.*

A most interesting autobiographical pamphlet written by Steele in defense of his public and private conduct on various occasions. It was published on October 22, 1714.

1719. *The Plebeian.*

A series of four political pamphlets. In the first of these pamphlets (March 14, 1719) Steele opposed Lord Sunderland's "Peerage Bill." (See *Introduction*, page xiv.) By so doing he came into conflict with Addison, who, in the first number of the *Old Whig* (March 19, 1719), took up the cudgels in support of that measure. Steele thereupon replied to Addison in two further numbers of the *Plebeian* (March 23 and March 30 respectively). Addison then made a second reply to Steele's two rejoinders in a second number of the *Old Whig* (April 2, 1719). Finally in the fourth and last number of the *Plebeian* (April 6, 1719) Steele ended the controversy by a final word in his own defense.

1722. *The Conscious Lovers. A Comedy.*

This last and best of Steele's comedies was acted with great success at Drury Lane Theater on November 7, 1722, and published on December 1 of the same year.

## II

## ADDISON

FORTUNE does not always spare us contemporary notices of the great men of the past. In the case of Addison, however, we have two such notices—one by Steele in his letter to Congreve, prefixed to the second edition of Addison's *Drummer* (London, 1721), and the other by Thomas Tickell, in his preface to his edition of Addison's works (four volumes, Tonson, London, 1721). Though they contain nothing more than scattered observations—chiefly on the character of Addison—these notices possess the authority that always belongs to the testimony of the personal friends of an author. Johnson has given us an interesting but somewhat biased life of Addison in his *Lives of the Poets* (1781). Johnson was a Tory. Moreover he based his memoir largely upon Spence's *Anecdotes*, which embodied the prejudices of Pope. For both these reasons, Johnson's life, though characterized by his usual vigor of style and masterful analysis of motive, is not always just to the man it commemorates. On the other hand, a somewhat over-laudatory view is presented by Macaulay in his essay on Addison in the *Edinburgh Review* for 1843. Macaulay was in thorough sympathy with Addison's principles, both personal and political, and finds, in consequence, nothing in Addison to find fault with. Equally flattering are the personal portraits of Addison drawn by Thackeray—one in the eleventh chapter of the second book of *Henry Esmond* (1852) and the other in his essay on *Congreve*

and Addison in his *English Humorists of the Eighteenth Century* (1853). Free alike from the charge of undue praise or blame is the life of Addison by W. J. Courthope in the English Men of Letters Series (The Macmillan Company, 1884). Courthope does not, like his predecessors, emphasize individual traits in Addison's character or individual incidents in his career, but presents us instead with a well-balanced estimate of the author and a consecutive and well-proportioned record of his life. Those who read French should not fail to consult the thorough and masterly analysis of the social and literary conditions under which Addison wrote presented by A. Beljame in the chapter on Addison in his *Le Public et les hommes de lettres en Angleterre au dix-huitième Siècle* (Hachette, Paris, 1897).

Addison's complete works are edited by H. G. Bohn, with notes by Richard Hurd, in six volumes, in the Bohn Library (Bell, London, 1901-1903).

#### LIST OF ADDISON'S MORE IMPORTANT WORKS

1689. *Inauguratio regis Gulielmi.*

This Latin poem was written by Addison to celebrate the accession of William of Orange to the throne of England. It was composed at Queen's College, Oxford, in the year 1689, and served, through the mediation of a certain Doctor Lancaster, to procure the author's transfer to a fellowship at Magdalen College.

1694. *An Account of the Greatest English Poets.*

It is interesting to note that in this poem on the best known English poets of his day Addison says nothing of Shakespeare, and but little either of Chaucer or of Spenser. The poem was published on April 3, 1694.

1694. *A Translation of all Virgil's Fourth Georgic, except the Story of Aristæus.*

The *Georgics* were poems written by Virgil in praise of agriculture. Addison's translation led Dryden, who happened at the time to be engaged on the same task, to exclaim, "after his 'Bees,' my latter swarm is scarce worth the hiving."

1695. *A Poem to his Majesty. Presented to the Lord Keeper.*

This poem was written to congratulate King William on the capture of Namur from the French and was dedicated to his patron, the Whig statesman Lord Somers, Keeper of the Great Seal.

1703. *A Letter from Italy to the Right Honorable Charles Lord Halifax, in the year MDCCI.*

A poetical epistle addressed by Addison to his patron the Whig statesman Charles Montagu, Lord Halifax. It was written by Addison while crossing Mt. Cenis on his return from Italy to Switzerland in the winter of 1701. The phrase, "classic ground," applied by the author to Italy, caught the fancy of contemporary readers and was often quoted.

1705. *Remarks on Several Parts of Italy, in the years 1701, 1702, 1703.*

A prose treatise in which the author discusses the degree of fidelity with which ancient authors described the scenery of Italy. Addison presented a copy of the work to Swift, whom he addressed as "the greatest genius of our age." The *Remarks* proved very popular and before entering a second edition arose to five times its original price.

1705. *The Campaign, A Poem; to his Grace the Duke of Marlborough.*

A poem written to celebrate the victory of Marlborough over the French at Blenheim on August 2, 1704. It was composed by Addison at the request of Lord Halifax and because of its official character was nicknamed "a gazette in rhyme." The comparison of Marlborough marshaling his battalions to an angel directing a storm cloud appealed strongly to contemporary taste as a happy instance of poetic compliment.

1706. *Rosamond, An Opera; inscribed to Her Grace the Duchess of Marlborough.*

An opera in the Italian style, in three acts, with music

by Thomas Clayton. The opera was acted without success at the Haymarket Theater on April 2, 1706.

1709-1711. *The Tatler*.

See page x.

1711-1712. *The Spectator*.

See page x.

1713. *Cato, A Tragedy*.

Acted with great success at Drury Lane Theater on April 14, 1713. *Cato* is the most "correct" tragedy in the English language, being written in strict conformity with the three "unities," insisted upon by the French and English critics of the day.

1713. *The Guardian*.

See page xi.

1714. *The Spectator* (Continued).

A continuation of the *Spectator* undertaken, presumably, by Budgell. The first number appeared on June 18, 1714, and the last on December 20 of the same year. The continuation appeared on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, and ran to the number of 80 papers, of which Addison wrote 24. It was afterwards published as the eighth volume of the first collected edition of the *Spectator*.

1716. *The Drummer: Or, the Haunted House*.

A comedy acted with but little success at Drury Lane Theater on March 10, 1716, and published without the name of the author, on March 21, 1716, and again, with the name of the author, on December 29, 1721.

1719. *The Old Whig*.

Two pamphlets written in support of Lord Sunderland's "Peerage Bill." The first appeared on March 19, 1719, and the second on April 2, 1719.

1721. *Dialogues upon the Usefulness of Ancient Medals*.

A prose treatise of considerable length upon the information afforded by ancient coins with respect to the civilization of the Greeks and Romans. The treatise was begun by Addison in Vienna in 1702 and continued at odd intervals thereafter but never completed. It was published, after the death of the author, by Tickell in his edition of Addison's works.

1721. *Evidences of the Christian Religion.*

A prose treatise begun by Addison in 1713 but left unfinished. It was also published by Tickell.

## III

THE *TATLER* AND THE *SPECTATOR*

The *Tatler* is published in four volumes by G. A. Aitken (Duckworth & Co., London, 1898-1899). The *Spectator* was first published by Buckley and Tonsor, in an eight-volume edition, corrected by Steele and Addison, in the years 1712-1715. It has since been edited by Henry Morley in a convenient one-volume edition (Routledge, 1868), and by G. Gregory Smith in four volumes (Dutton, 1909).





**THE  
SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY  
PAPERS**



**Richard Steele**

# THE SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY PAPERS

## I. MR. SPECTATOR

[No. 1. Thursday, March 1, 1711. ADDISON.]

Non fumum ex fulgore, sed ex fumo dare lucem  
Cogitat, ut speciosa dehinc miracula promat.

HOR.

I HAVE observed that a reader seldom peruses a book with pleasure till he knows whether the writer of it be a black or a fair man, of a mild or choleric disposition, married or a bachelor, with other particulars of the like nature that conduce very much to the right understanding 5 of an author. To gratify this curiosity, which is so natural to a reader, I design this paper and my next as prefatory discourses to my following writings, and shall give some account in them of the several persons that are engaged in this work. As the chief trouble of compiling, digest- 10 ing, and correcting will fall to my share, I must do myself the justice to open the work with my own history. I was born to a small hereditary estate, which, according to the tradition of the village where it lies, was bounded by the same hedges and ditches in William the Conqueror's time 15 that it is at present, and has been delivered down from father to son whole and entire, without the loss or acquisition of a single field or meadow, during the space of six hundred years. There runs a story in the family that my mother dreamt that she was brought to bed of a judge. 20

#### 4      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

Whether this might proceed from a lawsuit which was then depending in the family, or my father's being a justice of the peace, I cannot determine; for I am not so vain as to think it presaged any dignity that I should arrive at  
5 in my future life, though that was the interpretation which the neighborhood put upon it. The gravity of my behavior at my very first appearance in the world and all the time that I sucked, seemed to favor my mother's dream; for, as she had often told me, I threw away my rattle be-  
10 fore I was two months old, and would not make use of my coral till they had taken away the bells from it.

As for the rest of my infancy, there being nothing in it remarkable, I shall pass it over in silence. I find that during my nonage I had the reputation of a very sullen  
15 youth, but was always a favorite of my schoolmaster, who used to say that my parts were solid and would wear well. I had not been long at the university before I distinguished myself by a most profound silence; for during the space of eight years, excepting in the public exercises  
20 of the college, I scarce uttered the quantity of an hundred words; and indeed do not remember that I ever spoke three sentences together in my whole life. Whilst I was in this learned body I applied myself with so much diligence to my studies that there are very few celebrated  
25 books, either in the learned or the modern tongues, which I am not acquainted with.

Upon the death of my father I was resolved to travel into foreign countries, and therefore left the university with the character of an odd, unaccountable fellow, that  
30 had a great deal of learning, if I would but show it. An insatiable thirst after knowledge carried me into all the countries of Europe in which there was anything new or strange to be seen; nay, to such a degree was my curiosity raised, that having read the controversies of some great

men concerning the antiquities of Egypt, I made a voyage to Grand Cairo on purpose to take the measure of a pyramid; and as soon as I had set myself right in that particular, returned to my native country with great satisfaction.

I have passed my latter years in this city, where I am frequently seen in most public places, though there are not above half a dozen of my select friends that know me; of whom my next paper shall give a more particular account. There is no place of general resort wherein I do not often make my appearance; sometimes I am seen thrusting my head into a round of politicians at Will's, and listening with great attention to the narratives that are made in those little circular audiences. Sometimes I smoke a pipe at Child's, and whilst I seem attentive to nothing but the *Postman*, overhear the conversation of every table in the room. I appear on Sunday nights at St. James's Coffee-house, and sometimes join the little committee of politics in the inner room, as one who comes there to hear and improve. My face is likewise very well known at the Grecian, the Cocoa Tree, and in the theaters both of Drury Lane and the Haymarket. I have been taken for a merchant upon the Exchange for above these ten years, and sometimes pass for a Jew in the assembly of stockjobbers at Jonathan's. In short, wherever I see a cluster of people, I always mix with them, though I never open my lips but in my own club.

Thus I live in the world rather as a spectator of mankind than as one of the species; by which means I have made myself a speculative statesman, soldier, merchant, and artisan, without ever meddling with any practical part in life. I am very well versed in the theory of an husband or a father, and can discern the errors in the economy, business, and diversion of others better than those who are engaged in them, as standers-by discover

## 6 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

blots which are apt to escape those who are in the game. I never espoused any party with violence, and am resolved to observe an exact neutrality between the Whigs and Tories, unless I shall be forced to declare myself by  
5 the hostilities of either side. In short, I have acted in all the parts of my life as a looker-on, which is the character I intend to preserve in this paper.

I have given the reader just so much of my history and character as to let him see I am not altogether unquali-  
10 fied for the business I have undertaken. As for other particulars in my life and adventures, I shall insert them in following papers as I shall see occasion. In the meantime, when I consider how much I have seen, read, and heard, I begin to blame my own taciturnity; and since I  
15 have neither time nor inclination to communicate the fullness of my heart in speech, I am resolved to do it in writing, and to print myself out, if possible, before I die. I have been often told by my friends that it is pity so many useful discoveries which I have made, should be in the pos-  
20 session of a silent man. For this reason, therefore, I shall publish a sheetful of thoughts every morning for the benefit of my contemporaries; and if I can any way contribute to the diversion or improvement of the country in which I live, I shall leave it, when I am summoned out of it, with  
25 the secret satisfaction of thinking that I have not lived in vain.

There are three very material points which I have not spoken to in this paper and which, for several important reasons, I must keep to myself, at least for some time: I  
30 mean, an account of my name, my age, and my lodgings. I must confess, I would gratify my reader in anything that is reasonable; but as for these three particulars, though I am sensible they might tend very much to the embellishment of my paper, I cannot yet come to a resolution

of communicating them to the public. They would indeed draw me out of that obscurity which I have enjoyed for many years, and expose me in public places to several salutes and civilities which have been always very disagreeable to me; for the greatest pain I can suffer is the 5 being talked to and being stared at. It is for this reason, likewise, that I keep my complexion and dress as very great secrets; though it is not impossible but I may make discoveries of both in the progress of the work I have undertaken. 10

After having been thus particular upon myself, I shall in to-morrow's paper give an account of those gentlemen who are concerned with me in this work; for, as I have before intimated, a plan of it is laid and concerted—as all other matters of importance are—in a club. How- 15 ever, as my friends have engaged me to stand in the front, those who have a mind to correspond with me may direct their letters to the Spectator, at Mr. Buckley's in Little Britain. For I must further acquaint the reader that though our club meets only on Tuesdays and Thurs- 20 days, we have appointed a committee to sit every night for the inspection of all such papers as may contribute to the advancement of the public weal. C.

## II. THE CLUB

[No. 2. Friday, March 2, 1711. STEELE.]

*Ast alii sex*

*Et plures uno conclamant ore.*

*Juv.*

THE first of our society is a gentleman of Worcester-shire, of ancient descent, a baronet, his name Sir Roger 25 de Coverley. His great-grandfather was inventor of that



## 8 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

famous country-dance which is called after him. All who know that shire are very well acquainted with the parts and merits of Sir Roger. He is a gentleman that is very singular in his behavior, but his singularities proceed  
5 from his good sense, and are contradictions to the manners of the world only as he thinks the world is in the wrong. However, this humor creates him no enemies, for he does nothing with sourness or obstinacy; and his being unconfined to modes and forms makes him but the readier  
10 and more capable to please and oblige all who know him. When he is in town he lives in Soho Square. It is said he keeps himself a bachelor by reason he was crossed in love by a perverse, beautiful widow of the next county to him. Before this disappointment Sir Roger  
15 was what you call a fine gentleman; had often supped with my Lord Rochester and Sir George Etherege, fought a duel upon his first coming to town, and kicked Bully Dawson in a public coffee-house for calling him "youngster." But being ill-used by the above-mentioned widow,  
20 he was very serious for a year and a half; and though, his temper being naturally jovial, he at last got over it, he grew careless of himself and never dressed afterwards. He continues to wear a coat and doublet of the same cut that were in fashion at the time of his repulse, which, in  
25 his merry humors, he tells us, has been in and out twelve times since he first wore it. He is now in his fifty-sixth year, cheerful, gay, and hearty; keeps a good house both in town and country; a great lover of mankind; but there is such a mirthful cast in his behavior that he is  
30 rather beloved than esteemed. His tenants grow rich, his servants look satisfied, all the young women profess love to him, and the young men are glad of his company. When he comes into a house he calls the servants by their names and talks all the way up-stairs to a visit. I

must not omit that Sir Roger is a justice of the quorum; that he fills the chair at a quarter session with great abilities; and, three months ago, gained universal applause by explaining a passage in the Game Act.

The gentleman next in esteem and authority among us 5 is another bachelor, who is a member of the Inner Temple; a man of great probity, wit, and understanding; but he has chosen his place of residence rather to obey the direction of an old humorsome father than in pursuit of his own inclinations. He was placed there to 10 study the laws of the land and is the most learned of any of the house in those of the stage. Aristotle and Longinus are much better understood by him than Littleton or Coke. The father sends up, every post, questions relating to marriage-articles, leases, and tenures, in the 15 neighborhood; all which questions he agrees with an attorney to answer and take care of in the lump. He is studying the passions themselves when he should be inquiring into the debates among men which arise from them. He knows the argument of each of the orations 20 of Demosthenes and Tully but not one case in the reports of our own courts. No one ever took him for a fool, but none, except his intimate friends, know he has a great deal of wit. This turn makes him at once both disinterested and agreeable. As few of his thoughts are drawn 25 from business they are most of them fit for conversation. His taste of books is a little too just for the age he lives in; he has read all, but approves of very few. His familiarity with the customs, manners, actions, and writings of the ancients makes him a very delicate observer 30 of what occurs to him in the present world. He is an excellent critic, and the time of the play is his hour of business; exactly at five he passes through New Inn, crosses through Russell Court, and takes a turn at Will's

## 10      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

till the play begins; he has his shoes rubbed and his periwig powdered at the barber's as you go into the Rose. It is for the good of the audience when he is at a play, for the actors have an ambition to please him.

5      The person of next consideration is Sir Andrew Freeport, a merchant of great eminence in the city of London; a person of indefatigable industry, strong reason, and great experience. His notions of trade are noble and generous, and—as every rich man has usually some sly way of  
10    jesting which would make no great figure were he not a rich man—he calls the sea the British Common. He is acquainted with commerce in all its parts, and will tell you that it is a stupid and barbarous way to extend  
15    dominion by arms; for true power is to be got by arts and industry. He will often argue that if this part of our trade were well cultivated, we should gain from one nation; and if another, from another. I have heard him prove that diligence makes more lasting acquisitions than  
20    valor, and that sloth has ruined more nations than the sword. He abounds in several frugal maxims, amongst which the greatest favorite is, “A penny saved is a penny got.” A general trader of good sense is pleasanter company than a general scholar; and Sir Andrew having a  
25    natural, unaffected eloquence, the perspicuity of his discourse gives the same pleasure that wit would in another man. He has made his fortunes himself, and says that England may be richer than other kingdoms by as plain methods as he himself is richer than other men; though at  
30    the same time I can say this of him, that there is not a point in the compass but blows home a ship in which he is an owner.

Next to Sir Andrew in the club-room sits Captain Sentry, a gentleman of great courage, good understanding, but invincible modesty. He is one of those that deserve

very well, but are very awkward at putting their talents within the observation of such as should take notice of them. He is some years a captain and behaved himself with great gallantry in several engagements and at several sieges; but having a small estate of his own and 5 being next heir to Sir Roger, he has quitted a way of life in which no man can rise suitably to his merit who is not something of a courtier as well as a soldier. I have heard him often lament that in a profession where merit is placed in so conspicuous a view, impudence 10 should get the better of modesty. When he has talked to this purpose I never heard him make a sour expression, but frankly confess that he left the world because he was not fit for it. A strict honesty and an even, regular behavior are in themselves obstacles to him that must 15 press through crowds who endeavor at the same end with himself—the favor of a commander. He will, however, in his way of talk, excuse generals for not disposing according to men's desert or inquiring into it. "For," says he, "that great man who has a mind to help me 20 has as many to break through to come at me as I have to come at him"; therefore he will conclude that the man who would make a figure, especially in a military way, must get over all false modesty and assist his patron against the importunity of other pretenders by a proper 25 assurance in his own vindication. He says it is a civil cowardice to be backward in asserting what you ought to expect, as it is a military fear to be slow in attacking when it is your duty. With this candor does the gentleman speak of himself and others. The same frankness runs 30 through all his conversation. The military part of his life has furnished him with many adventures, in the relation of which he is very agreeable to the company; for he is never overbearing, though accustomed to command

## 12 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

men in the utmost degree below him; nor ever too obsequious from an habit of obeying men highly above him.

But that our society may not appear a set of humorists  
5 unacquainted with the gallantries and pleasures of the age,  
we have among us the gallant Will Honeycomb, a gentleman who, according to his years, should be in the decline of his life, but having ever been very careful of his person and always had a very easy fortune, time has made but  
10 very little impression either by wrinkles on his forehead or traces in his brain. His person is well turned, of a good height. He is very ready at that sort of discourse with which men usually entertain women. He has all his life dressed very well and remembers habits as others do  
15 men. He can smile when one speaks to him and laughs easily. He knows the history of every mode and can inform you from which of the French king's wenches our wives and daughters had this manner of curling their hair, that way of placing their hoods, and whose vanity to show  
20 her foot made that part of the dress so short in such a year. In a word, all his conversation and knowledge has been in the female world. As other men of his age will take notice to you what such a minister said upon such and such an occasion, he will tell you when the Duke  
25 of Monmouth danced at court such a woman was then smitten, another was taken with him at the head of his troop in the Park. In all these important relations he has ever about the same time received a kind glance or a blow of a fan from some celebrated beauty, mother  
30 of the present Lord Such-a-one. If you speak of a young commoner that said a lively thing in the House, he starts up: "He has good blood in his veins; that young fellow's mother used me more like a dog than any woman I ever made advances to." This way of talking of his

very much enlivens the conversation among us of a more sedate turn; and I find there is not one of the company but myself, who rarely speak at all, but speaks of him as of that sort of man who is usually called a well-bred, fine gentleman. To conclude his character, where women 5 are not concerned, he is an honest, worthy man.

I cannot tell whether I am to account him whom I am next to speak of as one of our company, for he visits us but seldom; but when he does, it adds to every man else a new enjoyment of himself. He is a clergyman, a very 10 philosophic man, of general learning, great sanctity of life, and the most exact good breeding. He has the misfortune to be of a very weak constitution, and consequently cannot accept of such cares and business as preferments in his function would oblige him to; he is therefore 15 among divines what a chamber-counselor is among lawyers. The probity of his mind and the integrity of his life create him followers, as being eloquent or loud advances others. He seldom introduces the subject he speaks upon; but we are so far gone in years that he observes, when 20 he is among us, an earnestness to have him fall on some divine topic, which he always treats with much authority, as one who has no interests in this world, as one who is hastening to the object of all his wishes, and conceives hope from his decays and infirmities. These are my ordi- 25 nary companions.

R.

## III. MR. SPECTATOR AT HIS CLUB

[No. 34. Monday, April 9, 1711. ADDISON.]

Parcit  
Cognatis maculis similis fera—  
Juv.

THE club of which I am a member is very luckily composed of such persons as are engaged in different ways of life, and deputed, as it were, out of the most conspicuous classes of mankind. By this means I am furnished  
5 with the greatest variety of hints and materials, and know everything that passes in the different quarters and divisions, not only of this great city, but of the whole kingdom. My readers, too, have the satisfaction to find that there is no rank or degree among them who have not  
10 their representative in this club, and that there is always somebody present who will take care of their respective interests, that nothing may be written or published to the prejudice or infringement of their just rights and privileges.

15 I last night sat very late in company with this select body of friends, who entertained me with several remarks which they and others had made upon these my speculations, as also with the various success which they had met with among their several ranks and degrees of readers.  
20 Will Honeycomb told me, in the softest manner he could, that there were some ladies—"but for your comfort," says Will, "they are not those of the most wit"—that were offended at the liberties I had taken with the opera and the puppet-show; that some of them were likewise  
25 very much surprised that I should think such serious points

as the dress and equipage of persons of quality proper subjects for raillery.

He was going on, when Sir Andrew Freeport took him up short, and told him that the papers he hinted at had done great good in the city, and that all their wives and daughters were the better for them; and further added that the whole city thought themselves very much obliged to me for declaring my generous intentions to scourge vice and folly as they appear in a multitude, without condescending to be a publisher of particular intrigues. "In short," says Sir Andrew, "if you avoid that foolish beaten road of falling upon aldermen and citizens, and employ your pen upon the vanity and luxury of courts, your paper must needs be of general use."

Upon this my friend the Templar told Sir Andrew that he wondered to hear a man of his sense talk after that manner; that the city had always been the province for satire; and that the wits of King Charles's time jested upon nothing else during his whole reign. He then showed, by the examples of Horace, Juvenal, Boileau, and the best writers of every age, that the follies of the stage and court had never been accounted too sacred for ridicule, how great soever the persons might be that patronized them. "But after all," says he, "I think your raillery has made too great an excursion in attacking several persons of the Inns of Court; and I do not believe you can show me any precedent for your behavior in that particular."

My good friend Sir Roger de Coverley, who had said nothing all this while, began his speech with a "Pish!" and told us that he wondered to see so many men of sense so very serious upon fooleries. "Let our good friend," says he, "attack every one that deserves it; I would only advise you, Mr. Spectator"—applying himself



## 16 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

to me—"to take care how you meddle with country squires. They are the ornaments of the English nation, men of good heads and sound bodies, and, let me tell you, some of them take it ill of you that you mention fox-  
5 hunters with so little respect."

Captain Sentry spoke very sparingly on this occasion. What he said was only to commend my prudence in not touching upon the army, and advised me to continue to act discreetly in that point.

10 By this time I found every subject of my speculations was taken away from me by one or other of the club, and began to think myself in the condition of the good man that had one wife who took a dislike to his gray hairs, and another to his black, till by their picking out what each  
15 of them had an aversion to, they left his head altogether bald and naked.

While I was thus musing with myself, my worthy friend the clergyman, who, very luckily for me, was at the club that night, undertook my cause. He told us that he won-  
20 dered any order of persons should think themselves too considerable to be advised. That it was not quality, but innocence, which exempted men from reproof. That vice and folly ought to be attacked wherever they could be met with, and especially when they were placed in high  
25 and conspicuous stations of life. He further added that my paper would only serve to aggravate the pains of poverty, if it chiefly exposed those who are already depressed, and in some measure turned into ridicule by the meanness of their conditions and circumstances. He after-  
30 wards proceeded to take notice of the great use this paper might be of to the public by reprehending those vices which are too trivial for the chastisement of the law, and too fantastical for the cognizance of the pulpit. He then advised me to prosecute my undertaking with

cheerfulness, and assured me that whoever might be displeased with me, I should be approved by all those whose praises do honor to the persons on whom they are bestowed.

The whole club pays a particular deference to the discourse of this gentleman, and are drawn into what he says as much by the candid, ingenuous manner with which he delivers himself, as by the strength of argument and force of reason which he makes use of. Will Honeycomb immediately agreed that what he had said was right, and that, for his part, he would not insist upon the quarter which he had demanded for the ladies. Sir Andrew gave up the city with the same frankness. The Templar would not stand out, and was followed by Sir Roger and the Captain, who all agreed that I should be at liberty to carry the war into what quarter I pleased, provided I continued to combat with criminals in a body and to assault the vice without hurting the person.

This debate, which was held for the good of mankind, put me in mind of that which the Roman triumvirate were formerly engaged in for their destruction. Every man at first stood hard for his friend, till they found that by this means they should spoil their proscription; and at length, making a sacrifice of all their acquaintance and relations, furnished out a very decent execution.

Having thus taken my resolutions to march on boldly in the cause of virtue and good sense, and to annoy their adversaries in whatever degree or rank of men they may be found, I shall be deaf for the future to all the remonstrances that shall be made to me on this account. If Punch grows extravagant I shall reprimand him very freely. If the stage becomes a nursery of folly and impertinence, I shall not be afraid to animadvert upon it. In short, if I meet with anything in city, court, or country that shocks modesty or good manners, I shall use my

## 18      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

utmost endeavors to make an example of it. I must, however, intreat every particular person who does me the honor to be a reader of this paper, never to think himself, or any one of his friends or enemies aimed at in what is  
5 said; for I promise him never to draw a faulty character which does not fit at least a thousand people; or to publish a single paper that is not written in the spirit of benevolence and with a love to mankind.      C.

### IV. A LADY'S LIBRARY

[No. 37. Thursday, April 12, 1711. ADDISON.]

Non illa colo calathisve Minervæ  
Femineas assueta manus. . . .

VIRG.

SOME months ago my friend Sir Roger, being in the  
10 country, enclosed a letter to me, directed to a certain lady whom I shall here call by the name of Leonora, and as it contained matters of consequence, desired me to deliver it to her with my own hand. Accordingly I waited upon her ladyship pretty early in the morning, and was  
15 desired by her woman to walk into her lady's library, till such time as she was in readiness to receive me. The very sound of "a lady's library" gave me a great curiosity to see it; and as it was some time before the lady came to me, I had an opportunity of turning over a great  
20 many of her books, which were ranged together in a very beautiful order. At the end of the folios, which were finely bound and gilt, were great jars of china placed one above another in a very noble piece of architecture. The quartos were separated from the octavos by a pile of

smaller vessels, which rose in a delightful pyramid. The octavos were bounded by tea-dishes of all shapes, colors, and sizes, which were so disposed on a wooden frame that they looked like one continued pillar indented with the finest strokes of sculpture and stained with the greatest 5 variety of dyes.

That part of the library which was designed for the reception of plays and pamphlets and other loose papers was enclosed in a kind of square, consisting of one of the prettiest grotesque works that ever I saw, and made up 10 of scaramouches, lions, monkeys, mandarins, trees, shells, and a thousand other odd figures in china ware. In the midst of the room was a little japan table, with a quire of gilt paper upon it, and on the paper a silver snuffbox made in the shape of a little book. I found there were 15 several other counterfeit books upon the upper shelves, which were carved in wood, and served only to fill up the number, like fagots in the muster of a regiment. I was wonderfully pleased with such a mixed kind of furniture as seemed very suitable both to the lady and the scholar, 20 and did not know, at first, whether I should fancy myself in a grotto or in a library.

Upon my looking into the books, I found there were some few which the lady had bought for her own use; but that most of them had been got together either be- 25 cause she had heard them praised or because she had seen the authors of them. Among several that I examined I very well remember these that follow:

Ogilby's *Virgil*.

Dryden's *Juvenal*.

*Cassandra*.

*Cleopatra*.

*Astraea*.

Sir Isaac Newton's Works.

## 20 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

*The Grand Cyrus*, with a pin stuck in one of the middle leaves.

Pembroke's *Arcadia*.

Locke of *Human Understanding*, with a paper of 5 patches in it.

A spelling book.

A dictionary for the explanation of hard words.

Sherlock upon *Death*.

*The Fifteen Comforts of Matrimony*.

10 Sir William Temple's *Essays*.

Father Malebranche's *Search after Truth*, translated into English.

A book of novels.

*The Academy of Compliments*.

15 Culpepper's *Midwifery*.

*The Ladies' Calling*.

*Tales in Verse*, by Mr. D'Urfey; bound in red leather, gilt on the back, and doubled down in several places.

All the classic authors in wood.

20 A set of Elzevirs by the same hand.

*Clelia*, which opened of itself in the place that describes two lovers in a bower.

Baker's *Chronicle*.

*Advice to a Daughter*.

25 *The New Atalantis*, with a key to it.

Mr. Steele's *Christian Hero*.

A prayer-book; with a bottle of Hungary water, by the side of it.

Dr. Sacheverell's Speech.

30 Fielding's Trial.

Seneca's *Morals*.

Taylor's *Holy Living and Dying*.

La Ferte's *Instructions for Country Dances*.

I was taking a catalogue in my pocket-book of these

and several other authors, when Leonora entered, and upon my presenting her with the letter from the knight, told me, with an unspeakable grace, that she hoped Sir Roger was in good health. I answered, "Yes," for I hate long speeches, and after a bow or two retired. 5

Leonora was formerly a celebrated beauty, and is still a very lovely woman. She has been a widow for two or three years, and being unfortunate in her first marriage, has taken a resolution never to venture upon a second. She has no children to take care of, and leaves the management of her estate to my good friend Sir Roger. But as the mind naturally sinks into a kind of lethargy and falls asleep that is not agitated by some favorite pleasures and pursuits, Leonora has turned all the passions of her sex into a love of books and retirement. She converses chiefly with men—as she has often said herself—but it is only in their writings; and admits of very few male visitants except my friend Sir Roger, whom she hears with great pleasure and without scandal. 15

As her reading has lain very much among romances, 20 it has given her a very particular turn of thinking, and discovers itself even in her house, her gardens, and her furniture. Sir Roger has entertained me an hour together with a description of her country seat, which is situated in a kind of wilderness, about an hundred miles distant 25 from London, and looks like a little enchanted palace. The rocks about her are shaped into artificial grottoes covered with woodbines and jessamines. The woods are cut into shady walks, twisted into bowers, and filled with cages of turtles. The springs are made to run among 30 pebbles and by that means taught to murmur very agreeably. They are likewise collected into a beautiful lake, that is inhabited by a couple of swans and empties itself by a little rivulet, which runs through a green meadow

## 22      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

and is known in the family by the name of the Purling Stream.

The knight likewise tells me that this lady preserves her game better than any of the gentlemen in the country.

5 "Not," says Sir Roger, "that she sets so great a value upon her partridges and pheasants as upon her larks and nightingales; for she says that every bird which is killed in her ground will spoil a consort, and that she shall certainly miss him the next year."

10 When I think how oddly this lady is improved by learning, I look upon her with a mixture of admiration and pity. Amidst these innocent entertainments which she has formed to herself, how much more valuable does she appear than those of her sex who employ themselves  
15 in diversions that are less reasonable, though more in fashion! What improvements would a woman have made who is so susceptible of impressions from what she reads, had she been guided to such books as have a tendency to enlighten the understanding and rectify the passions, as  
20 well as to those which are of little more use than to divert the imagination!

But the manner of a lady's employing herself usefully in reading shall be the subject of another paper, in which I design to recommend such particular books as may be  
25 proper for the improvement of the sex. And as this is a subject of a very nice nature, I shall desire my correspondents to give me their thoughts upon it.      C.

## V. PEDANTRY

[No. 105. Saturday, June 30, 1711. ADDISON.]

Id arbitror  
Adprime in vita esse utile, ne quid nimis.  
TER.

My friend Will Honeycomb values himself very much upon what he calls the knowledge of mankind, which has cost him many disasters in his youth; for Will reckons every misfortune that he has met with among men as parts of his education; and fancies he should never have been the man 5 he is had not he broke windows, knocked down constables, and disturbed honest people with his midnight serenades when he was a young fellow. The engaging in adventures of this nature Will calls the studying of mankind; and terms this knowledge of the town the knowledge of 10 the world. Will ingenuously confesses that for half his life his head ached every morning with reading of men overnight. This Will looks upon as the learning of a gentleman, and regards all other kinds of science as the accomplishments of one whom he calls a scholar, a book- 15 ish man, or a philosopher.

For these reasons Will shines in mixed company, where he has the discretion not to go out of his depth, and has often a certain way of making his real ignorance appear a seeming one. Our club, however, has frequently caught 20 him tripping, at which times they never spare him. For as Will often insults us with his knowledge of the town, we sometimes take our revenge upon him by our knowledge of books.



He was last week producing two or three letters which he writ in his youth to a coquette lady. The raillery of them was natural, and well enough for a mere man of the town, but, very unluckily, several of the words were  
 5 wrong spelt. Will laughed this off at first as well as he could; but, finding himself pushed on all sides, and especially by the Templar, he told us, with a little passion, that he never liked pedantry in spelling, and that he spelt  
 10 like a gentleman, and not like a scholar. Upon this Will had recourse to his old topic of showing the narrow-spiritedness, the pride, and ignorance of pedants; which he carried so far that, upon my retiring to my lodgings, I could not forbear throwing together such reflections as occurred to me upon that subject.

15 A man who has been brought up among books, and is able to talk of nothing else, is a very indifferent companion, and what we call a pedant. But methinks we should enlarge the title, and give it every one that does not know how to think out of his profession and particular way of life.

What is a greater pedant than a mere man of the town! Bar him the play-houses and a catalogue of the reigning beauties, and you strike him dumb. How many a pretty gentleman's knowledge lies all within the verge  
 25 of the court! He will tell you the names of the principal favorites, repeat the shrewd sayings of a man of quality, whisper an intrigue that is not yet blown upon by common fame; or, if the sphere of his observations is a little larger than ordinary, will perhaps enter into all the  
 30 incidents, turns, and revolutions in a game of ombre. When he has gone thus far, he has shown you the whole circle of his accomplishments, his parts are drained, and he is disabled from any further conversation. What are these but rank pedants? And yet these are the men who

value themselves most on their exemption from the pedantry of colleges.

I might here mention the military pedant who always talks in a camp, and is storming towns, making lodgements, and fighting battles from one end of the year to 5 the other. Everything he speaks smells of gunpowder; if you take away his artillery from him, he has not a word to say for himself. I might likewise mention the law pedant, that is perpetually putting cases, repeating the transactions of Westminster Hall, wrangling with 10 you upon the most indifferent circumstances of life, and not to be convinced of the distance of a place, or of the most trivial point in conversation but by dint of argument. The state pedant is wrapt up in news, and lost in politics. If you mention either of the kings of Spain or 15 Poland, he talks very notably; but if you go out of the *Gazette*, you drop him. In short, a mere courtier, a mere soldier, a mere scholar, a mere anything, is an insipid pedantic character and equally ridiculous.

Of all the species of pedants which I have mentioned, 20 the book pedant is much the most supportable. He has at least an exercised understanding and a head which is full, though confused, so that a man who converses with him may often receive from him hints of things that are worth knowing and what he may possibly turn to his own ad- 25 vantage, though they are of little use to the owner. The worst kind of pedants among learned men are such as are naturally endued with a very small share of common-sense, and have read a great number of books without taste or distinction.

The truth of it is, learning, like traveling and all 30 other methods of improvement, as it finishes good sense, so it makes a silly man ten thousand times more insufferable, by supplying variety of matter to his impertinence

## 26 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

and giving him an opportunity of abounding in absurdities.

Shallow pedants cry up one another much more than men of solid and useful learning. To read the titles they  
5 give an editor or collator of a manuscript, you would take him for the glory of the commonwealth of letters and the wonder of his age, when perhaps upon examination you find that he has only rectified a Greek particle or laid out a whole sentence in proper commas.

10 They are obliged, indeed, to be thus lavish of their praises that they may keep one another in countenance; and it is no wonder if a great deal of knowledge, which is not capable of making a man wise, has a natural tendency to make him vain and arrogant. L.

## VI. COVERLEY HALL

[No. 106. Monday, July 2, 1711. ADDISON.]

Hinc tibi copia  
Manabit ad plenum benigno  
Ruris honorum opulenta cornu.

HOR.

15 HAVING often received an invitation from my friend Sir Roger de Coverley to pass away a month with him in the country, I last week accompanied him thither, and am settled with him for some time at his country house, where I intend to form several of my ensuing specula-  
20 tions. Sir Roger, who is very well acquainted with my humor, lets me rise and go to bed when I please, dine at his own table or in my chamber, as I think fit, sit still and say nothing without bidding me be merry. When the gentlemen of the country come to see him, he only

shows me at a distance. As I have been walking in his fields I have observed them stealing a sight of me over an hedge, and have heard the knight desiring them not to let me see them, for that I hated to be stared at.

I am the more at ease in Sir Roger's family because it consists of sober and staid persons. For, as the knight is the best master in the world, he seldom changes his servants; and as he is beloved by all about him, his servants never care for leaving him. By this means his domestics 10 are all in years, and grown old with their master. You would take his valet de chambre for his brother, his butler is gray-headed, his groom is one of the gravest men that I have ever seen, and his coachman has the looks of a 15 privy counselor. You see the goodness of the master even in the old house dog, and in a gray pad that is kept in the stable with great care and tenderness out of regard to his past services, though he has been useless for several years.

I could not but observe with a great deal of pleasure 20 the joy that appeared in the countenances of these ancient domestics upon my friend's arrival at his country seat. Some of them could not refrain from tears at the sight of their old master; every one of them pressed forward to do something for him, and seemed discouraged 25 if they were not employed. At the same time the good old knight, with a mixture of the father and the master of the family, tempered the inquiries after his own affairs with several kind questions relating to themselves. This humanity and good nature engages everybody to him, so 30 that when he is pleasant upon any of them, all his family are in good humor, and none so much as the person whom he diverts himself with; on the contrary, if he coughs, or betrays any infirmity of old age, it is easy for

## 28      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

a stander-by to observe a secret concern in the looks of all his servants.

My worthy friend has put me under the particular care of his butler, who is a very prudent man, and, as well as  
5 the rest of his fellow-servants, wonderfully desirous of pleasing me, because they have often heard their master talk of me as of his particular friend.

My chief companion, when Sir Roger is diverting himself in the woods or the fields, is a very venerable man  
10 who is ever with Sir Roger, and has lived at his house in the nature of a chaplain above thirty years. This gentleman is a person of good sense and some learning, of a very regular life and obliging conversation; he heartily loves Sir Roger, and knows that he is very much in the  
15 old knight's esteem, so that he lives in the family rather as a relation than a dependent.

I have observed in several of my papers that my friend Sir Roger, amidst all his good qualities, is something of an humorist, and that his virtues as well as imperfections  
20 are, as it were, tinged by a certain extravagance which makes them particularly his, and distinguishes them from those of other men. This cast of mind, as it is generally very innocent in itself, so it renders his conversation highly agreeable, and more delightful than the same de-  
25 gree of sense and virtue would appear in their common and ordinary colors. As I was walking with him last night, he asked me how I liked the good man whom I have just now mentioned; and without staying for my answer, told me that he was afraid of being insulted with  
30 Latin and Greek at his own table, for which reason he desired a particular friend of his at the university to find him out a clergyman rather of plain sense than much learning, of a good aspect, a clear voice, a sociable temper, and, if possible, a man that understood a little of

backgammon. "My friend," says Sir Roger, "found me out this gentleman, who, besides the endowments required of him, is, they tell me, a good scholar, though he does not show it. I have given him the parsonage of the parish, and, because I know his value, have settled 5 upon him a good annuity for life. If he outlives me, he shall find that he was higher in my esteem than perhaps he thinks he is. He has now been with me thirty years, and though he does not know I have taken notice of it, has never in all that time asked anything of me for him- 10 self, though he is every day soliciting me for something in behalf of one or other of my tenants, his parishioners. There has not been a lawsuit in the parish since he has lived among them; if any dispute arises they apply them- 15 selves to him for the decision; if they do not acquiesce in his judgment—which I think never happened above once or twice at most—, they appeal to me. At his first settling with me, I made him a present of all the good sermons which have been printed in English, and only begged of him that every Sunday he would pronounce 20 one of them in the pulpit. Accordingly he has digested them into such a series that they follow one another naturally and make a continued system of practical divinity."

As Sir Roger was going on in his story, the gentleman we were talking of came up to us, and upon the knight's 25 asking him who preached to-morrow—for it was Saturday night—, told us the Bishop of St. Asaph in the morning and Dr. South in the afternoon. He then showed us his list of preachers for the whole year, where I saw, with a great deal of pleasure, Archbishop Tillotson, Bishop 30 Sanderson, Dr. Barrow, Dr. Calamy, with several living authors who have published discourses of practical divinity. I no sooner saw this venerable man in the pulpit but I very much approved of my friend's insisting upon

the qualifications of a good aspect and a clear voice; for I was so charmed with the gracefulness of his figure and delivery, as well as with the discourses he pronounced, that I think I never passed any time more to my satisfaction. A sermon repeated after this manner is like the composition of a poet in the mouth of a graceful actor.

I could heartily wish that more of our country clergy would follow this example; and instead of wasting their spirits in laborious compositions of their own, would endeavor after a handsome elocution, and all those other talents that are proper to enforce what has been penned by greater masters. This would not only be more easy to themselves, but more edifying to the people.      L.

## VII. THE COVERLEY SERVANTS

[No. 107. Tuesday, July 3, 1711. STEELE.]

*Æsopo ingentem statuam posuere Attici  
Servumque collocarunt aeterna in basi,  
Patere honoris scirent ut cuncti viam.*

PHAED.

THE reception, manner of attendance, undisturbed freedom, and quiet which I meet with here in the country, has confirmed me in the opinion I always had, that the general corruption of manners in servants is owing to the conduct of masters. The aspect of every one in the family carries so much satisfaction that it appears he knows the happy lot which has befallen him in being a member of it. There is one particular which I have seldom seen but at Sir Roger's; it is usual in all other places that servants fly from the parts of the house through which their master is passing; on the contrary, here, they industriously place themselves in his way; and it is on both

sides, as it were, understood as a visit, when the servants appear without calling. This proceeds from the humane and equal temper of the man of the house, who also perfectly well knows how to enjoy a great estate with such economy as ever to be much beforehand. This makes 5 his own mind untroubled, and consequently unapt to vent peevish expressions, or give passionate or inconsistent orders to those about him. Thus respect and love go together; and a certain cheerfulness in performance of their duty is the particular distinction of the lower 10 part of this family. When a servant is called before his master, he does not come with an expectation to hear himself rated for some trivial fault, threatened to be stripped, or used with any other unbecoming language, which mean masters often give to worthy servants; but 15 it is often to know what road he took that he came so readily back according to order, whether he passed by such a ground, if the old man who rents it is in good health, or whether he gave Sir Roger's love to him, or the like. 20

A man who preserves a respect founded on his benevolence to his dependents lives rather like a prince than a master in his family; his orders are received as favors rather than duties; and the distinction of approaching him is part of the reward for executing what is com- 25 manded by him.

There is another circumstance in which my friend excels in his management, which is the manner of rewarding his servants. He has ever been of opinion that giving his cast clothes to be worn by valets has a very 30 ill effect upon little minds, and creates a silly sense of equality between the parties, in persons affected only with outward things. I have heard him often pleasant on this occasion, and describe a young gentleman abus-



## 32 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

ing his man in that coat which a month or two before was the most pleasing distinction he was conscious of in himself. He would turn his discourse still more pleasantly upon the ladies' bounties of this kind; and I have  
5 heard him say he knew a fine woman who distributed rewards and punishments in giving becoming or unbecoming dresses to her maids.

But my good friend is above these little instances of good-will, in bestowing only trifles on his servants; a  
10 good servant to him is sure of having it in his choice very soon of being no servant at all. As I before observed, he is so good an husband, and knows so thoroughly that the skill of the purse is the cardinal virtue of this life—I say, he knows so well that frugality is the support of  
15 generosity—, that he can often spare a large fine when a tenement falls, and give that settlement to a good servant who has a mind to go into the world, or make a stranger pay the fine to that servant, for his more comfortable maintenance, if he stays in his service.

20 A man of honor and generosity considers it would be miserable to himself to have no will but that of another, though it were of the best person breathing, and for that reason goes on as fast as he is able to put his servants into independent livelihoods. The greatest part of Sir  
25 Roger's estate is tenanted by persons who have served himself or his ancestors. It was to me extremely pleasant to observe the visitants from several parts to welcome his arrival into the country; and all the difference that I could take notice of between the late servants who came  
30 to see him and those who stayed in the family, was that these latter were looked upon as finer gentlemen and better courtiers.

This manumission and placing them in a way of livelihood I look upon as only what is due to a good servant,

which encouragement will make his successor be as diligent, as humble, and as ready as he was. There is something wonderful in the narrowness of those minds which can be pleased, and be barren of bounty to those who please them.

One might, on this occasion, recount the sense that great persons in all ages have had of the merit of their dependents, and the heroic services which men have done their masters in the extremity of their fortunes, and shown to their undone patrons that fortune was all the difference between them; but as I design this my speculation only as a gentle admonition to thankless masters, I shall not go out of the occurrences of common life, but assert it, as a general observation, that I never saw, but in Sir Roger's family and one or two more, good servants treated as they ought to be. Sir Roger's kindness extends to their children's children, and this very morning he sent his coachman's grandson to prentice. I shall conclude this paper with an account of a picture in his gallery, where there are many which will deserve my future observation.

At the very upper end of this handsome structure I saw the portraiture of two young men standing in a river, the one naked, the other in livery. The person supported seemed half dead, but still so much alive as to show in his face exquisite joy and love towards the other. I thought the fainting figure resembled my friend Sir Roger; and, looking at the butler, who stood by me, for an account of it, he informed me that the person in the livery was a servant of Sir Roger's, who stood on the shore while his master was swimming, and observing him taken with some sudden illness, and sink under water, jumped in and saved him. He told me Sir Roger took off the dress he was in as soon as he came home, and by a great bounty at that time, followed by his favor ever since, had

## 34 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

made him master of that pretty seat which we saw at a distance as we came to this house. I remembered indeed Sir Roger said there lived a very worthy gentleman, to whom he was highly obliged, without mentioning anything  
5 further. Upon my looking a little dissatisfied at some part of the picture, my attendant informed me that it was against Sir Roger's will, and at the earnest request of the gentleman himself, that he was drawn in the habit in which he had saved his master. R.

### VIII. WILL WIMBLE

[No. 108. Wednesday, July 4, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Gratis anhelans, multa agendo nihil agens.*

PHAED.

10 As I was yesterday morning walking with Sir Roger before his house, a country fellow brought him a huge fish, which, he told him, Mr. William Wimble had caught that very morning, and that he presented it with his service to him, and intended to come and dine with him. At  
15 the same time he delivered a letter, which my friend read to me as soon as the messenger left him.

“Sir Roger,

I desire you to accept of a jack, which is the best I have caught this season. I intend to come and stay with  
20 you a week, and see how the perch bite in the Black River. I observed with some concern, the last time I saw you upon the bowling-green, that your whip wanted a lash to it; I will bring half a dozen with me that I twisted last week, which I hope will serve you all the time

you are in the country. I have not been out of the saddle for six days last past, having been at Eton with Sir John's eldest son. He takes to his learning hugely.

I am, sir, your humble servant,

WILL WIMBLE." 5

This extraordinary letter and message that accompanied it made me very curious to know the character and quality of the gentleman who sent them, which I found to be as follows. Will Wimble is younger brother to a baronet, and descended of the ancient family of the 10 Wimbles. He is now between forty and fifty, but, being bred to no business and born to no estate, he generally lives with his elder brother as superintendent of his game. He hunts a pack of dogs better than any man in the country, and is very famous for finding out a hare. He 15 is extremely well versed in all the little handicrafts of an idle man; he makes a may-fly to a miracle, and furnishes the whole country with angle-rods. As he is a good-natured, officious fellow, and very much esteemed upon account of his family, he is a welcome guest at every 20 house, and keeps up a good correspondence among all the gentlemen about him. He carries a tulip-root in his pocket from one to another, or exchanges a puppy between a couple of friends that live perhaps in the opposite sides of the county. Will is a particular favorite of all the 25 young heirs, whom he frequently obliges with a net that he has weaved, or a setting-dog that he has made himself. He now and then presents a pair of garters of his own knitting to their mothers or sisters, and raises a great deal of mirth among them by inquiring, as often as he 30 meets them, how they wear. These gentleman-like manufactures and obliging little humors make Will the darling of the country.

## 36 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

Sir Roger was proceeding in the character of him, when he saw him make up to us with two or three hazel twigs in his hand that he had cut in Sir Roger's woods, as he came through them in his way to the house. I was  
5 very much pleased to observe on one side the hearty and sincere welcome with which Sir Roger received him, and on the other, the secret joy which his guest discovered at sight of the good old knight. After the first salutes were over, Will desired Sir Roger to lend him one of his serv-  
10 ants to carry a set of shuttlecocks he had with him in a little box to a lady that lived about a mile off, to whom it seems he had promised such a present for above this half year. Sir Roger's back was no sooner turned but honest Will began to tell me of a large cock-pheasant  
15 that he had sprung in one of the neighboring woods, with two or three other adventures of the same nature. Odd and uncommon characters are the game that I look for and most delight in; for which reason I was as much pleased with the novelty of the person that talked to me  
20 as he could be for his life with the springing of a pheasant, and therefore listened to him with more than ordinary attention.

In the midst of his discourse the bell rung to dinner, where the gentleman I have been speaking of had the  
25 pleasure of seeing the huge jack he had caught served up for the first dish in a most sumptuous manner. Upon our sitting down to it, he gave us a long account how he had hooked it, played with it, foiled it, and at length drew it out upon the bank, with several other particulars  
30 that lasted all the first course. A dish of wild fowl that came afterwards furnished conversation for the rest of the dinner, which concluded with a late invention of Will's for improving the quail-pipe.

Upon withdrawing into my room after dinner I was

secretly touched with compassion towards the honest gentleman that had dined with us, and could not but consider, with a great deal of concern, how so good an heart and such busy hands were wholly employed in trifles; that so much humanity should be so little beneficial to 5 others, and so much industry so little advantageous to himself. The same temper of mind and application to affairs might have recommended him to the public esteem, and have raised his fortune in another station of life. What good to his country or himself might not a trader or 10 merchant have done with such useful though ordinary qualifications?

Will Wimble's is the case of many a younger brother of a great family, who had rather see their children starve like gentlemen than thrive in a trade or profession that is 15 beneath their quality. This humor fills several parts of Europe with pride and beggary. It is the happiness of a trading nation like ours that the younger sons, though incapable of any liberal art or profession, may be placed in such a way of life as may perhaps enable them to vie 20 with the best of their family. Accordingly we find several citizens that were launched into the world with narrow fortunes, rising by an honest industry to greater estates than those of their elder brothers. It is not improbable but Will was formerly tried at divinity, law, or physic; 25 and that finding his genius did not lie that way, his parents gave him up at length to his own inventions. But certainly, however improper he might have been for studies of a higher nature, he was perfectly well turned for the occupations of trade and commerce. As I think this is 30 a point which cannot be too much inculcated, I shall desire my reader to compare what I have here written with what I have said in my twenty-first speculation.

L.

## IX. THE COVERLEY PORTRAITS

[No. 109. Thursday, July 5, 1711. STEELE.]

*Abnormis sapiens.*

HOR.

I WAS this morning walking in the gallery, when Sir Roger entered at the end opposite to me, and advancing towards me, said he was glad to meet me among his relations, the de Coverleys, and hoped I liked the conversation of so much good company, who were as silent as myself. I knew he alluded to the pictures; and, as he is a gentleman who does not a little value himself upon his ancient descent, I expected he would give me some account of them. We were now arrived at the upper end of the gallery, when the knight faced towards one of the pictures, and, as we stood before it, he entered into the matter, after his blunt way of saying things as they occur to his imagination, without regular introduction or care to preserve the appearance of chain of thought.

15    "It is," said he, "worth while to consider the force of dress, and how the persons of one age differ from those of another merely by that only. One may observe, also, that the general fashion of one age has been followed by one particular set of people in another, and by them pre-  
 20 served from one generation to another. Thus, the vast jetting coat and small bonnet, which was the habit in Harry the Seventh's time, is kept on in the yeomen of the guard; not without a good and politic view, because they look a foot taller, and a foot and a half broader;  
 25 besides that, the cap leaves the face expanded, and consequently more terrible, and fitter to stand at the entrance of palaces.

“This predecessor of ours, you see, is dressed after this manner, and his cheeks would be no larger than mine, were he in a hat as I am. He was the last man that won a prize in the Tilt-yard, which is now a common street before Whitehall. You see the broken lance that 5 lies there by his right foot. He shivered that lance of his adversary all to pieces; and, bearing himself—look you, sir—in this manner, at the same time he came within the target of the gentleman who rode against him, and taking him with incredible force before him on the pom- 10 mel of his saddle, he in that manner rid the tournament over, with an air that showed he did it rather to perform the rule of the lists than expose his enemy. However, it appeared he knew how to make use of a victory; and, with a gentle trot, he marched up to a gallery where their 15 mistress sat—for they were rivals—and let him down with laudable courtesy and pardonable insolence. I don’t know but it might be exactly where the coffee-house is now.

“You are to know this my ancestor was not only of a 20 military genius, but fit also for the arts of peace; for he played on the bass viol as well as any gentleman at court. You see where his viol hangs by his basket-hilt sword. The action at the Tilt-yard you may be sure won the fair lady, who was a maid of honor, and the greatest 25 beauty of her time. Here she stands, the next picture. You see, sir, my great-great-great-grandmother has on the new-fashioned petticoat, except that the modern is gathered at the waist: my grandmother appears as if she stood in a large drum, whereas the ladies now walk as 30 if they were in a go-cart. For all this lady was bred at court, she became an excellent country wife; she brought ten children; and when I show you the library, you shall see, in her own hand, allowing for the difference of the



language, the best receipt now in England both for an hasty-pudding and a white-pot.

“If you please to fall back a little—because ’tis necessary to look at the three next pictures at one view—these  
5 are three sisters. She on the right hand, who is so very beautiful, died a maid; the next to her, still handsomer, had the same fate, against her will; this homely thing in the middle had both their portions added to her own, and was stolen by a neighboring gentleman, a man of strata-  
10 gem and resolution, for he poisoned three mastiffs to come at her, and knocked down two deer-stealers in carrying her off. Misfortunes happen in all families. The theft of this romp and so much money was no great matter to our estate. But the next heir that possessed it was this  
15 soft gentleman, whom you see there; observe the small buttons, the little boots, the laces, the slashes about his clothes, and, above all, the posture he is drawn in—which to be sure was his own choosing. You see he sits with one hand on a desk, writing and looking as it were  
20 another way, like an easy writer or a sonneteer. He was one of those that had too much wit to know how to live in the world; he was a man of no justice, but great good manners; he ruined everybody that had anything to do with him, but never said a rude thing in his life; the  
25 most indolent person in the world, he would sign a deed that passed away half his estate with his gloves on, but would not put on his hat before a lady if it were to save his country. He is said to be the first that made love by squeezing the hand. He left the estate with ten thou-  
30 sand pounds’ debt upon it; but, however, by all hands I have been informed that he was every way the finest gentleman in the world. That debt lay heavy on our house for one generation; but it was retrieved by a gift from that honest man you see there, a citizen of our

name, but nothing at all akin to us. I know Sir Andrew Freeport has said behind my back that this man was descended from one of the ten children of the maid of honor I showed you above; but it was never made out. We winked at the thing indeed, because money was 5 wanting at that time."

Here I saw my friend a little embarrassed, and turned my face to the next portraiture.

Sir Roger went on with his account of the gallery in the following manner: "This man"—pointing to him I 10 looked at—"I take to be the honor of our house, Sir Humphrey de Coverley. He was in his dealings as punctual as a tradesman and as generous as a gentleman. He would have thought himself as much undone by breaking his word as if it were to be followed by bankruptcy. 15 He served his country as knight of this shire to his dying day. He found it no easy matter to maintain an integrity in his words and actions, even in things that regarded the offices which were incumbent upon him in the care of his own affairs and relations of life, and therefore dreaded, 20 though he had great talents, to go into employments of state, where he must be exposed to the snares of ambition. Innocence of life and great ability were the distinguishing parts of his character; the latter, he had often observed, had led to the destruction of the former, and 25 used frequently to lament that *great* and *good* had not the same signification. He was an excellent husbandman, but had resolved not to exceed such a degree of wealth; all above it he bestowed in secret bounties many years after the sum he aimed at for his own use was at- 30 tained. Yet he did not slacken his industry, but to a decent old age spent the life and fortune which was superfluous to himself in the service of his friends and neighbors."

## 42      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

Here we were called to dinner; and Sir Roger ended the discourse of this gentleman by telling me, as we followed the servant, that this his ancestor was a brave man, and narrowly escaped being killed in the Civil Wars; 5 "for," said he, "he was sent out of the field upon a private message the day before the battle of Worcester."

The whim of narrowly escaping by having been within a day of danger, with other matters above mentioned, mixed with good sense, left me at a loss whether I was 10 more delighted with my friend's wisdom or simplicity.

R.

### X. THE COVERLEY GHOST

[No. 110. Friday, July 6, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Horror ubique animos, simul ipsa silentia terrent.*

VIRG.

AT a little distance from Sir Roger's house, among the ruins of an old abbey, there is a long walk of aged elms, which are shot up so very high that when one passes under them the rooks and crows that rest upon the tops 15 of them seem to be cawing in another region. I am very much delighted with this sort of noise, which I consider as a kind of natural prayer to that Being who supplies the wants of His whole creation, and who, in the beautiful language of the Psalms, feedeth the young ravens that 20 call upon Him. I like this retirement the better because of an ill report it lies under of being haunted; for which reason, as I have been told in the family, no living creature ever walks in it besides the chaplain. My good friend the butler desired me, with a very grave face, not 25 to venture myself in it after sunset, for that one of the

footmen had been almost frightened out of his wits by a spirit that appeared to him in the shape of a black horse without an head; to which he added that about a month ago one of the maids coming home late that way, with a pail of milk upon her head, heard such a rustling among the bushes that she let it fall. 5

I was taking a walk in this place last night between the hours of nine and ten, and could not but fancy it one of the most proper scenes in the world for a ghost to appear in. The ruins of the abbey are scattered up and down on every side, and half covered with ivy and elder bushes the harbors of several solitary birds which seldom make their appearance till the dusk of the evening. The place was formerly a church-yard, and has still several marks in it of graves and burying-places. There is such an echo among the old ruins and vaults that if you stamp but a little louder than ordinary, you hear the sound repeated. At the same time the walk of elms, with the croaking of the ravens which from time to time are heard from the tops of them, looks exceeding solemn and venerable. These objects naturally raise seriousness and attention; and when night heightens the awfulness of the place, and pours out her supernumerary horrors upon everything in it, I do not at all wonder that weak minds fill it with specters and apparitions. 15 20 25

Mr. Locke, in his chapter of the *Association of Ideas*, has very curious remarks to show how, by the prejudice of education, one idea often introduces into the mind a whole set that bear no resemblance to one another in the nature of things. Among several examples of this kind, he produces the following instance: "The ideas of goblins and sprites have really no more to do with darkness than light; yet, let but a foolish maid inculcate these often on the mind of a child and raise them there to-

gether, possibly he shall never be able to separate them again so long as he lives, but darkness shall ever afterwards bring with it those frightful ideas, and they shall be so joined that he can no more bear the one than the other."

As I was walking in this solitude, where the dusk of the evening conspired with so many other occasions of terror, I observed a cow grazing not far from me, which an imagination that is apt to startle might easily have  
10 construed into a black horse without an head; and I dare say the poor footman lost his wits upon some such trivial occasion.

My friend Sir Roger has often told me, with a great deal of mirth, that at his first coming to his estate, he  
15 found three parts of his house altogether useless; that the best room in it had the reputation of being haunted, and by that means was locked up; that noises had been heard in his long gallery, so that he could not get a servant to enter it after eight o'clock at night; that the door  
20 of one of his chambers was nailed up, because there went a story in the family that a butler had formerly hanged himself in it; and that his mother, who lived to a great age, had shut up half the rooms in the house, in which either her husband, a son, or daughter had died. The  
25 knight, seeing his habitation reduced to so small a compass and himself in a manner shut out of his own house, upon the death of his mother ordered all the apartments to be flung open and exorcised by his chaplain, who lay in every room one after another, and by that means dis-  
30 sipated the fears which had so long reigned in the family.

I should not have been thus particular upon these ridiculous horrors, did not I find them so very much prevail in all parts of the country. At the same time, I think a person who is thus terrified with the imagination of ghosts

and specters much more reasonable than one who, contrary to the reports of all historians, sacred and profane, ancient and modern, and to the traditions of all nations, thinks the appearance of spirits fabulous and groundless. Could not I give myself up to this general testimony of 5 mankind, I should to the relations of particular persons who are now living, and whom I cannot distrust in other matters of fact. I might here add that not only the historians, to whom we may join the poets, but likewise the philosophers of antiquity have favored this opinion. 10 Lucretius himself, though by the course of his philosophy he was obliged to maintain that the soul did not exist separate from the body, makes no doubt of the reality of apparitions, and that men have often appeared after their death. This I think very remarkable; he was so pressed 15 with the matter of fact which he could not have the confidence to deny, that he was forced to account for it by one of the most absurd unphilosophical notions that was ever started. He tells us that the surfaces of all bodies are perpetually flying off from their respective bodies one 20 after another; and that these surfaces or thin cases—that included each other whilst they were joined in the body, like the coats of an onion—are sometimes seen entire when they are separated from it; by which means we often behold the shapes and shadows of persons who are either 25 dead or absent.

I shall dismiss this paper with a story out of Josephus, not so much for the sake of the story itself as for the moral reflections with which the author concludes it, and which I shall here set down in his own words: 30

“Glaphyra, the daughter of King Archelaus, after the death of her two first husbands—being married to a third, who was brother to her first husband, and so passionately in love with her that he turned off his former

## 46 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

wife to make room for this marriage—had a very odd kind of dream. She fancied that she saw her first husband coming towards her, and that she embraced him with great tenderness, when in the midst of the pleasure which  
5 she expressed at the sight of him, he reproached her after the following manner:

“‘Glaphyra,’ says he, ‘thou hast made good the old saying that women are not to be trusted. Was not I the husband of thy virginity? Have I not children by thee?  
10 How couldst thou forget our loves so far as to enter into a second marriage and after that into a third? However, for the sake of our past loves I shall free thee from thy present reproach, and make thee mine for ever.’

15 “Glaphyra told this dream to several women of her acquaintance, and died soon after.

“I thought this story might not be impertinent in this place wherein I speak of those kings. Besides that, the example deserves to be taken notice of, as it contains a  
20 most certain proof of the immortality of the soul, and of divine providence. If any man thinks these facts incredible, let him enjoy his own opinion to himself, but let him not endeavor to disturb the belief of others, who by instances of this nature are excited to the study of  
25 virtue.”

L.

## XI. SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER

[No. 112. Monday, July 9, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Ἀθανάτους μὲν πρῶτα θεοὺς, νόμῳ ὡς δικάκεται,  
Τίμα.*

PYTH.

I AM always very well pleased with a country Sunday, and think if keeping holy the seventh day were only a human institution, it would be the best method that could have been thought of for the polishing and civilizing of mankind. It is certain the country people would soon 5 degenerate into a kind of savages and barbarians were there not such frequent returns of a stated time, in which the whole village meet together with their best faces and in their cleanliest habits, to converse with one another upon indifferent subjects, hear their duties explained to 10 them, and join together in adoration of the Supreme Being. Sunday clears away the rust of the whole week, not only as it refreshes in their minds the notions of religion, but as it puts both the sexes upon appearing in their most agreeable forms, and exerting all such 15 qualities as are apt to give them a figure in the eye of the village. A country fellow distinguishes himself as much in the church-yard as a citizen does upon the Change, the whole parish politics being generally discussed at that place, either after sermon or before the 20 bell rings.

My friend Sir Roger, being a good churchman, has beautified the inside of his church with several texts of his own choosing; he has likewise given a handsome pulpit cloth, and railed in the communion table at his 25 own expense. He has often told me that, at his coming



## 48 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

to his estate, he found his parishioners very irregular; and that in order to make them kneel and join in the responses, he gave every one of them a hassock and a Common Prayer Book, and at the same time employed  
5 an itinerant singing-master, who goes about the country for that purpose, to instruct them rightly in the tunes of the Psalms, upon which they now very much value themselves, and indeed outdo most of the country churches that I have ever heard.

10 As Sir Roger is landlord to the whole congregation, he keeps them in very good order, and will suffer nobody to sleep in it besides himself; for, if by chance he has been surprised into a short nap at sermon, upon recovering out of it he stands up and looks about him, and if he sees  
15 anybody else nodding, either wakes them himself or sends his servant to them. Several other of the old knight's particularities break out upon these occasions; sometimes he will be lengthening out a verse in the singing Psalms half a minute after the rest of the congregation have done with it; sometimes, when he is pleased  
20 with the matter of his devotion, he pronounces "Amen" three or four times to the same prayer; and sometimes stands up when everybody else is upon their knees, to count the congregation, or see if any of his tenants are  
25 missing.

I was yesterday very much surprised to hear my old friend, in the midst of the service, calling out to one John Matthews to mind what he was about, and not disturb the congregation. This John Matthews, it seems, is  
30 remarkable for being an idle fellow, and at that time was kicking his heels for his diversion. This authority of the knight, though exerted in that odd manner which accompanies him in all circumstances of life, has a very good effect upon the parish, who are not polite enough to see

anything ridiculous in his behavior; besides that, the general good sense and worthiness of his character makes his friends observe these little singularities as foils that rather set off than blemish his good qualities.

As soon as the sermon is finished, nobody presumes to stir till Sir Roger is gone out of the church. The knight walks down from his seat in the chancel between a double row of his tenants, that stand bowing to him on each side, and every now and then inquires how such an one's wife, or mother, or son, or father do, whom he does not see at church—which is understood as a secret reprimand to the person that is absent.

The chaplain has often told me that, upon a catechizing day, when Sir Roger had been pleased with a boy that answers well, he has ordered a Bible to be given him next day for his encouragement, and sometimes accompanies it with a flitch of bacon to his mother. Sir Roger has likewise added five pounds a year to the clerk's place; and that he may encourage the young fellows to make themselves perfect in the church service, has promised, upon the death of the present incumbent, who is very old, to bestow it according to merit.

The fair understanding between Sir Roger and his chaplain and their mutual concurrence in doing good, is the more remarkable because the very next village is famous for the differences and contentions that rise between the parson and the squire, who live in a perpetual state of war. The parson is always preaching at the squire, and the squire, to be revenged on the parson, never comes to church. The squire has made all his tenants atheists and tithe stealers; while the parson instructs them every Sunday in the dignity of his order, and insinuates to them in almost every sermon that he is a better man than his patron. In short, matters are come

to such an extremity that the squire has not said his prayers either in public or private this half year; and that the parson threatens him, if he does not mend his manners, to pray for him in the face of the whole congregation.

Feuds of this nature, though too frequent in the country, are very fatal to the ordinary people, who are so used to be dazzled with riches that they pay as much deference to the understanding of a man of an estate as of a man of learning, and are very hardly brought to regard any truth, how important soever it may be, that is preached to them, when they know there are several men of five hundred a year who do not believe it. L.

## XII. SIR ROGER IN LOVE

[No. 113. Tuesday, July 10, 1711. STEELE.]

**Haerent infixi pectore vultus.**

**VIRG.**

IN my first description of the company in which I pass  
15 most of my time, it may be remembered that I mentioned  
a great affliction which my friend Sir Roger had met with  
in his youth—which was no less than a disappointment  
in love. It happened this evening that we fell into a very  
pleasing walk at a distance from his house. As soon as  
20 we came to it, “It is,” quoth the good old man, looking  
round him with a smile, “very hard that any part of my  
land should be settled upon one who has used me so ill  
as the perverse widow did; and yet I am sure I could  
not see a sprig of any bough of this whole walk of trees  
25 but I should reflect upon her and her severity. She has

certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world. You are to know this was the place wherein I used to muse upon her; and by that custom I can never come into it but the same tender sentiments revive in my mind, as if I could actually walk with that beautiful creature 5 under these shades. I have been fool enough to carve her name on the bark of several of these trees, so unhappy is the condition of men in love to attempt the removing of their passion by the methods which serve only to imprint it deeper. She has certainly the finest hand 10 of any woman in the world."

Here followed a profound silence; and I was not displeased to observe my friend falling so naturally into a discourse which I had ever before taken notice he industriously avoided. After a very long pause he entered 15 upon an account of this great circumstance in his life, with an air which I thought raised my idea of him above what I had ever had before; and gave me the picture of that cheerful mind of his before it received that stroke which has ever since affected his words and actions. But 20 he went on as follows:

"I came to my estate in my twenty-second year, and resolved to follow the steps of the most worthy of my ancestors who have inhabited this spot of earth before me, in all the methods of hospitality and good neighbor- 25 hood, for the sake of my fame, and in country sports and recreations, for the sake of my health. In my twenty-third year I was obliged to serve as sheriff of the county; and in my servants, officers, and whole equipage indulged the pleasure of a young man, who did not think ill of his 30 own person, in taking that public occasion of showing my figure and behavior to advantage. You may easily imagine to yourself what appearance I made, who am pretty tall, rid well, and was very well dressed, at the head of a whole

county, with music before me, a feather in my hat, and my horse well bitted. I can assure you I was not a little pleased with the kind looks and glances I had from all the balconies and windows, as I rode to the hall where  
5 the assizes were held. But when I came there, a beautiful creature in a widow's habit sat in court, to hear the event of a cause concerning her dower. This commanding creature—who was born for destruction of all who behold her—put on such a resignation in her countenance,  
10 and bore the whispers of all around the court with such a pretty uneasiness, I warrant you, and then recovered herself from one eye to another, till she was perfectly confused by meeting something so wistful in all she encountered that at last, with a murrain to her, she cast her  
15 bewitching eye upon me. I no sooner met it but I bowed like a great surprised booby; and knowing her cause to be the first which came on, I cried, like a captivated calf as I was, 'Make way for the defendant's witnesses!' This sudden partiality made all the county immediately see the  
20 sheriff also was become a slave to the fine widow. During the time her cause was upon trial, she behaved herself, I warrant you, with such a deep attention to her business, took opportunities to have little billets handed to her counsel, then would be in such a pretty confusion—  
25 occasioned, you must know, by acting before so much company—that not only I but the whole court was prejudiced in her favor; and all that the next heir to her husband had to urge was thought so groundless and frivolous that, when it came to her counsel to reply, there was not  
30 half so much said as every one besides in the court thought he could have urged to her advantage. You must understand, sir, this perverse woman is one of those unaccountable creatures that secretly rejoice in the admiration of men, but indulge themselves in no further

consequences. Hence it is that she has ever had a train of admirers, and she removes from her slaves in town to those in the country according to the seasons of the year. She is a reading lady, and far gone in the pleasures of friendship; she is always accompanied by a confidante, 5 who is witness to her daily protestations against our sex, and consequently a bar to her first steps towards love, upon the strength of her own maxims and declarations.

“ However, I must needs say this accomplished mis- 10  
tress of mine has distinguished me above the rest, and has been known to declare Sir Roger de Coverley was the tamest and most human of all the brutes in the country. I was told she said so by one who thought he rallied me; but, upon the strength of this slender encouragement of 15  
being thought least detestable, I made new liveries, new-paired my coach-horses, sent them all to town to be bitted and taught to throw their legs well and move altogether, before I pretended to cross the country and wait upon 20  
her. As soon as I thought my retinue suitable to the 20  
character of my fortune and youth, I set out from hence to make my addresses. The particular skill of this lady has ever been to inflame your wishes and yet command respect. To make her mistress of this art, she has a  
greater share of knowledge, wit, and good sense than is 25  
usual even among men of merit. Then she is beautiful beyond the race of women. If you won't let her go on with a certain artifice with her eyes, and the skill of beauty, she will arm herself with her real charms, and strike you with admiration instead of desire. It is cer- 30  
tain that, if you were to behold the whole woman, there is that dignity in her aspect, that composure in her motion, that complacency in her manner, that if her form makes you hope, her merit makes you fear. But then

again, she is such a desperate scholar that no country gentleman can approach her without being a jest. As I was going to tell you, when I came to her house I was admitted to her presence with great civility; at the same  
5 time she placed herself to be first seen by me in such an attitude, as I think you call the posture of a picture, that she discovered new charms, and I at last came towards her with such an awe as made me speechless. This she no sooner observed but she made her advantage of it,  
10 and began a discourse to me concerning love and honor, as they both are followed by pretenders and the real votaries to them. When she had discussed these points in a discourse which I verily believe was as learned as the best philosopher in Europe could possibly make, she  
15 asked me whether she was so happy as to fall in with my sentiments on these important particulars. Her confidante sat by her, and upon my being in the last confusion and silence, this malicious aid of hers, turning to her, says, 'I am very glad to observe Sir Roger pauses upon  
20 this subject, and seems resolved to deliver all his sentiments upon the matter when he pleases to speak.' They both kept their countenances, and after I had sat half an hour meditating how to behave before such profound casuists, I rose up and took my leave. Chance has since  
25 that time thrown me very often in her way, and she as often has directed a discourse to me which I do not understand. This barbarity has kept me ever at a distance from the most beautiful object my eyes ever beheld. It is thus also she deals with all mankind, and you must  
30 make love to her, as you would conquer the sphinx, by posing her. But were she like other women, and that there were any talking to her, how constant must the pleasure of that man be who could converse with a creature— But, after all, you may be sure her heart is fixed

on some one or other; and yet I have been credibly informed—but who can believe half that is said? After she had done speaking to me, she put her hand to her bosom and adjusted her tucker. Then she cast her eyes a little down, upon my beholding her too earnestly. They say she sings excellently; her voice in her ordinary speech has something in it inexpressibly sweet. You must know I dined with her at a public table the day after I first saw her, and she helped me to some tansy in the eye of all the gentlemen in the country; she has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world. I can assure you, sir, were you to behold her, you would be in the same condition; for, as her speech is music, her form is angelic. But I find I grow irregular while I am talking of her; but indeed it would be stupidity to be unconcerned at such perfection. Oh, the excellent creature! She is as inimitable to all women as she is inaccessible to all men.”

I found my friend begin to rave, and insensibly led him towards the house, that we might be joined by some other company; and am convinced that the widow is the secret cause of all that inconsistency which appears in some parts of my friend's discourse. Though he has so much command of himself as not directly to mention her, yet, according to that of Martial, which one knows not how to render in English, “*Dum tacet hanc loquitur.*” I shall end this paper with that whole epigram, which represents with much humor my honest friend's condition.

“*Quicquid agit Rufus, nihil nisi est Naevia Rufo;  
Si gaudet, si flet, si tacet, hanc loquitur;  
Caenat, propinat, poscit, negat, annuit—una est  
Naevia; si non sit Naevia, mutus erit.  
Scriberet hesterna patri cum luce salutem,  
'Naevia lux,' inquit, 'Naevia lumen, ave.'*” 30



- “Let Rufus weep, rejoice, stand, sit, or walk,  
 Still he can nothing but of Naevia talk;  
 Let him eat, drink, ask questions, or dispute,  
 Still he must speak of Naevia or be mute.  
 5 He writ to his father, ending with this line—  
 ‘I am, my lovely Naevia, ever thine!’”

R.

## XIII. SIR ROGER GOES A-HUNTING

[No. 116. Friday, July 13, 1711. BUDGELL.]

—Vocat ingenti clamore Cithaeron,  
 Taygetique canes.

VIRG.

THOSE who have searched into human nature observe that nothing so much shows the nobleness of the soul as that its felicity consists in action. Every man has such  
 10 an active principle in him that he will find out something to employ himself upon, in whatever place or state of life he is posted. I have heard of a gentleman who was under close confinement in the Bastile seven years; during which time he amused himself in scattering a few small pins  
 15 about his chamber, gathering them up again, and placing them in different figures on the arm of a great chair. He often told his friends afterwards that unless he had found out this piece of exercise, he verily believed he should have lost his senses.

- 20 After what has been said, I need not inform my readers that Sir Roger, with whose character I hope they are at present pretty well acquainted, has in his youth gone through the whole course of those rural diversions which the country abounds in, and which seem to be extremely  
 25 well suited to that laborious industry a man may observe here in a far greater degree than in towns and cities. I

have before hinted at some of my friend's exploits; he has in his youthful days taken forty covey of partridges in a season, and tired many a salmon with a line consisting but of a single hair. The constant thanks and good wishes of the neighborhood always attended him on account of 5 his remarkable enmity towards foxes, having destroyed more of those vermin in one year than it was thought the whole country could have produced. Indeed, the knight does not scruple to own, among his most intimate friends, that in order to establish his reputation this way, he has 10 secretly sent for great numbers of them out of other counties, which he used to turn loose about the country by night, that he might better signalize himself in their destruction the next day. His hunting horses were the finest and best managed in all these parts; his tenants 15 are still full of the praises of a gray stone-horse that unhappily staked himself several years since, and was buried with great solemnity in the orchard.

Sir Roger, being at present too old for fox-hunting, to keep himself in action has disposed of his beagles and 20 got a pack of stop-hounds. What these want in speed he endeavors to make amends for by the deepness of their mouths and the variety of their notes, which are suited in such manner to each other that the whole cry makes up a complete concert. He is so nice in this particular that 25 a gentleman having made him a present of a very fine hound the other day, the knight returned it by the servant with a great many expressions of civility, but desired him to tell his master that the dog he had sent was indeed a most excellent bass, but that at present he only wanted 30 a counter tenor. Could I believe my friend had ever read Shakespeare, I should certainly conclude he had taken the hint from Theseus, in the *Midsummer Night's Dream*:

"My hounds are bred out of the Spartan kind,  
 So flew'd, so sanded, and their heads are hung  
 With ears that sweep away the morning dew;  
 Crook-knee'd and dew-lapped like Thessalian bulls;  
 5      Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouths, like bells,  
       Each under each. A cry more tuneable  
       Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn."

Sir Roger is so keen at this sport that he has been out almost every day since I came down; and upon the chap-  
 10 lain's offering to lend me his easy pad, I was prevailed on yesterday morning to make one of the company. I was extremely pleased, as we rid along, to observe the general benevolence of all the neighborhood towards my friend. The farmer's sons thought themselves happy if  
 15 they could open a gate for the good old knight as he passed by; which he generally requited with a nod or a smile, and a kind inquiry after their fathers and uncles.

After we had rid about a mile from home, we came upon a large heath, and the sportsmen began to beat.  
 20 They had done so for some time, when, as I was at a little distance from the rest of the company, I saw a hare pop out from a small furze-brake almost under my horse's feet. I marked the way she took, which I endeavored to make the company sensible of by extending my arm; but to  
 25 no purpose, till Sir Roger, who knows that none of my extraordinary motions are insignificant, rode up to me, and asked me if puss was gone that way. Upon my answering, "Yes," he immediately called in the dogs and put them upon the scent. As they were going off, I heard  
 30 one of the country fellows muttering to his companion that 'twas a wonder they had not lost all their sport, for want of the silent gentleman's crying "Stole away!"

This, with my aversion to leaping hedges, made me withdraw to a rising ground, from whence I could have

the pleasure of the whole chase, without the fatigue of keeping in with the hounds. The hare immediately threw them above a mile behind her; but I was pleased to find that instead of running straight forwards, or, in hunter's language, "flying the country," as I was afraid she might have done, she wheeled about, and described a sort of circle round the hill where I had taken my station, in such manner as gave me a very distinct view of the sport. I could see her first pass by, and the dogs some time afterwards unraveling the whole track she had made, and following her through all her doubles. I was at the same time delighted in observing that deference which the rest of the pack paid to each particular hound, according to the character he had acquired amongst them; if they were at fault, and an old hound of reputation opened but once, he was immediately followed by the whole cry; while a raw dog, or one who was a noted liar, might have yelped his heart out without being taken notice of.

The hare now, after having squatted two or three times, and been put up again as often, came still nearer to the place where she was at first started. The dogs pursued her, and these were followed by the jolly knight, who rode upon a white gelding, encompassed by his tenants and servants, and cheering his hounds with all the gaiety of five-and-twenty. One of the sportsmen rode up to me, and told me that he was sure the chase was almost at an end, because the old dogs, which had hitherto lain behind, now headed the pack. The fellow was in the right. Our hare took a large field just under us, followed by the full cry "in view." I must confess the brightness of the weather, the cheerfulness of everything around me, the chiding of the hounds, which was returned upon us in a double echo from two neighboring hills, with the hollowing of the sportsmen, and the sounding of the horn, lifted

## 60 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

my spirits into a most lively pleasure, which I freely indulged because I was sure it was innocent. If I was under any concern, it was on the account of the poor hare, that was now quite spent, and almost within the reach of her enemies; when the huntsman, getting forward, threw down his pole before the dogs. They were now within eight yards of that game which they had been pursuing for almost as many hours; yet on the signal before mentioned, they all made a sudden stand, and though they continued opening as much as before, durst not once attempt to pass beyond the pole. At the same time Sir Roger rode forward, and alighting, took up the hare in his arms, which he soon after delivered up to one of his servants with an order, if she could be kept alive, to let her go in his great orchard, where it seems he has several of these prisoners of war, who live together in a very comfortable captivity. I was highly pleased to see the discipline of the pack, and the good-nature of the knight, who could not find in his heart to murder a creature that had given him so much diversion.

As we were returning home I remembered that Monsieur Pascal, in his most excellent discourse on the *Misery of Man*, tells us that all our endeavors after greatness proceed from nothing but a desire of being surrounded by a multitude of persons and affairs that may hinder us from looking into ourselves, which is a view we cannot bear. He afterwards goes on to show that our love of sports comes from the same reason, and is particularly severe upon hunting. "What," says he, "unless it be to drown thought, can make men throw away so much time and pains upon a silly animal, which they might buy cheaper in the market?" The foregoing reflection is certainly just when a man suffers his whole mind to be drawn into his sports, and altogether loses

himself in the woods; but does not affect those who propose a far more laudable end from this exercise—I mean, the preservation of health, and keeping all the organs of the soul in a condition to execute her orders. Had that incomparable person, whom I last quoted, been 5 a little more indulgent to himself in this point, the world might probably have enjoyed him much longer; whereas through too great an application to his studies in his youth, he contracted that ill habit of body which, after a tedious sickness, carried him off in the fortieth year of 10 his age; and the whole history we have of his life till that time, is but one continued account of the behavior of a noble soul struggling under innumerable pains and distempers.

For my own part, I intend to hunt twice a week during 15 my stay with Sir Roger; and shall prescribe the moderate use of this exercise to all my country friends, as the best kind of physic for mending a bad constitution and preserving a good one.

I cannot do this better than in the following lines out 20 of Mr. Dryden:

“The first physicians by debauch were made;  
Excess began, and sloth sustains the trade.  
By chase our long-lived fathers earned their food;  
Toil strung the nerves, and purified the blood; 25  
But we their sons, a pamper’d race of men,  
Are dwindled down to threescore years and ten.  
Better to hunt in fields for health unbought  
Than fee the doctor for a nauseous draught.  
The wise for cure on exercise depend; 30  
God never made his work for man to mend.”

X.

## XIV. THE COVERLEY WITCH

[No. 117. Saturday, July 14, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Ipsi sibi somnia fingunt.*

VIRG.

THERE are some opinions in which a man should stand neuter, without engaging his assent to one side or the other. Such a hovering faith as this, which refuses to settle upon any determination, is absolutely necessary in  
 5 a mind that is careful to avoid errors and prepossessions. When the arguments press equally on both sides, in matters that are indifferent to us, the safest method is to give up ourselves to neither.

It is with this temper of mind that I consider the sub-  
 10 ject of witchcraft. When I hear the relations that are made from all parts of the world—not only from Norway and Lapland, from the East and West Indies, but from every particular nation in Europe—I cannot forbear thinking that there is such an intercourse and com-  
 15 merce with evil spirits as that which we express by the name of witchcraft. But when I consider that the ignorant and credulous parts of the world abound most in these relations, and that the persons among us who are supposed to engage in such an infernal commerce are  
 20 people of a weak understanding and a crazed imagination, and at the same time reflect upon the many impostures and delusions of this nature that have been detected in all ages, I endeavor to suspend my belief till I hear more certain accounts than any which have yet  
 25 come to my knowledge. In short, when I consider the question whether there are such persons in the world as

those we call witches, my mind is divided between the two opposite opinions; or rather, to speak my thoughts freely, I believe in general that there is, and has been, such a thing as witchcraft, but at the same time can give no credit to any particular instance of it. 5

I am engaged in this speculation by some occurrences that I met with yesterday, which I shall give my reader an account of at large. As I was walking with my friend Sir Roger by the side of one of his woods, an old woman applied herself to me for my charity. Her dress and 10 figure put me in mind of the following description in Otway:

“In a close lane as I pursued my journey,  
I spied a wrinkled hag, with age grown double,  
Picking dry sticks, and mumbling to herself. 15  
Her eyes with scalding rheum were gall’d and red;  
Cold palsy shook her head; her hands seem’d wither’d;  
And on her crooked shoulders had she wrapp’d  
The tatter’d remnants of an old striped hanging,  
Which served to keep her carcase from the cold; 20  
So there was nothing of a piece about her.  
Her lower weeds were all o’er coarsely patch’d  
With diff’rent color’d rags—black, red, white, yellow—  
And seemed to speak variety of wretchedness.”

As I was musing on this description and comparing it 25 with the object before me, the knight told me that this very old woman had the reputation of a witch all over the country, that her lips were observed to be always in motion, and that there was not a switch about her house which her neighbors did not believe had carried her 30 several hundreds of miles. If she chanced to stumble, they always found sticks or straws that lay in the figure of a cross before her. If she made any mistake at church, and cried “Amen” in a wrong place, they never



## 64 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

failed to conclude that she was saying her prayers backwards. There was not a maid in the parish that would take a pin of her, though she should offer a bag of money with it. She goes by the name of Moll White, and has  
5 made the country ring with several imaginary exploits which are palmed upon her. If the dairy maid does not make her butter come so soon as she should have it, Moll White is at the bottom of the churn. If a horse sweats in the stable, Moll White has been upon his back.  
10 If a hare makes an unexpected escape from the hounds, the huntsman curses Moll White. "Nay," says Sir Roger, "I have known the master of the pack, upon such an occasion, send one of his servants to see if Moll White had been out that morning."

15 This account raised my curiosity so far that I begged my friend Sir Roger to go with me into her hovel, which stood in a solitary corner under the side of the wood. Upon our first entering, Sir Roger winked to me, and pointed at something that stood behind the door, which,  
20 upon looking that way, I found to be an old broomstaff. At the same time, he whispered me in the ear to take notice of a tabby cat that sat in the chimney-corner, which, as the old knight told me, lay under as bad a report as Moll White herself; for besides that Moll is  
25 said often to accompany her in the same shape, the cat is reported to have spoken twice or thrice in her life, and to have played several pranks above the capacity of an ordinary cat.

I was secretly concerned to see human nature in so  
30 much wretchedness and disgrace, but at the same time could not forbear smiling to hear Sir Roger, who is a little puzzled about the old woman, advising her, as a justice of peace, to avoid all communication with the devil, and never to hurt any of her neighbors' cattle.

We concluded our visit with a bounty, which was very acceptable.

In our return home, Sir Roger told me that old Moll had been often brought before him for making children spit pins, and giving maids the nightmare; and that the 5 country people would be tossing her into a pond and trying experiments with her every day, if it was not for him and his chaplain.

I have since found, upon inquiry, that Sir Roger was several times staggered with the reports that had been 10 brought him concerning this old woman, and would frequently have bound her over to the county sessions had not his chaplain with much ado persuaded him to the contrary.

I have been the more particular in this account because 15 I hear there is scarce a village in England that has not a Moll White in it. When an old woman begins to dote, and grow chargeable to a parish, she is generally turned into a witch, and fills the whole country with extravagant fancies, imaginary distempers, and terrifying dreams. In 20 the meantime the poor wretch that is the innocent occasion of so many evils begins to be frightened at herself, and sometimes confesses secret commerce and familiarities that her imagination forms in a delirious old age. This frequently cuts off charity from the greatest objects of 25 compassion, and inspires people with a malevolence towards those poor, decrepit parts of our species in whom human nature is defaced by infirmity and dotage. L.

## XV. SIR ROGER TALKS OF THE WIDOW

[No. 118. Monday, July 16, 1711. STEELE.]

*Haeret lateri lethalis arundo.*

VIRG.

THIS agreeable seat is surrounded with so many pleasing walks, which are struck out of a wood in the midst of which the house stands, that one can hardly ever be weary of rambling from one labyrinth of delight to another. To one used to live in a city, the charms of the country are so exquisite that the mind is lost in a certain transport which raises us above ordinary life, and yet is not strong enough to be inconsistent with tranquillity. This state of mind was I in, ravished with the murmur of waters, the whisper of breezes, the singing of birds, and whether I looked up to the heavens, down on the earth, or turned on the prospects around me, still struck with new sense of pleasure, when I found, by the voice of my friend, who walked by me, that we had insensibly strolled into the grove sacred to the widow.

"This woman," says he, "is of all others the most unintelligible; she either designs to marry, or she does not. What is the most perplexing of all is that she doth not either say to her lovers she has any resolution against that condition of life in general, or that she banishes them; but, conscious of her own merit, she permits their addresses without fear of any ill consequence or want of respect from their rage or despair. She has that in her aspect against which it is impossible to offend. A man whose thoughts are constantly bent upon so agreeable an object must be excused if the ordinary occurrences

in conversation are below his attention. I call her indeed perverse; but, alas! why do I call her so? Because her superior merit is such that I cannot approach her without awe, that my heart is checked by too much esteem; I am angry that her charms are not more accessible, that 5 I am more inclined to worship than salute her. How often have I wished her unhappy that I might have an opportunity of serving her; and how often troubled in that very imagination, at giving her the pain of being obliged! Well, I have led a miserable life in secret upon 10 her account; but fancy she would have condescended to have some regard for me if it had not been for that watchful animal, her confidante.

"Of all persons under the sun," continued he, calling me by name, "be sure to set a mark upon confidantes; 15 they are of all people the most impertinent. What is most pleasant to observe in them is that they assume to themselves the merit of the persons whom they have in their custody. Orestilla is a great fortune, and in wonderful danger of surprises; therefore full of suspicions of 20 the least indifferent thing, particularly careful of new acquaintance, and of growing too familiar with the old. Themista, her favorite woman, is every whit as careful of whom she speaks to, and what she says. Let the ward be a beauty, her confidante shall treat you with an air of dis- 25 tance; let her be a fortune, and she assumes the suspicious behavior of her friend and patroness. Thus it is that very many of our unmarried women of distinction are to all intents and purposes married, except the consideration of different sexes. They are directly under the conduct of 30 their whisperer, and think they are in a state of freedom while they can prate with one of these attendants of all men in general, and still avoid the man they most like. You do not see one heiress in a hundred whose fate does

## 68 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

not turn upon this circumstance of choosing a confidante. Thus it is that the lady is addressed to, presented, and flattered only by proxy, in her woman. In my case, how is it possible that—”

5 Sir Roger was proceeding in his harangue, when we heard the voice of one speaking very importunately, and repeating these words: “What, not one smile?” We followed the sound till we came to a close thicket, on the other side of which we saw a young woman sitting as it  
10 were in a personated sullenness just over a transparent fountain. Opposite to her stood Mr. William, Sir Roger’s master of the game. The knight whispered me, “Hist, these are lovers!” The huntsman, looking earnestly at the shadow of the young maiden in the stream: “O  
15 thou dear picture! if thou couldst remain there in the absence of that fair creature whom you represent in the water, how willingly could I stand here satisfied for ever, without troubling my dear Betty herself with any mention of her unfortunate William, whom she is angry with!  
20 but alas! when she pleases to be gone, thou wilt also vanish;—yet let me talk to thee while thou dost stay. Tell my dearest Betty thou dost not more depend upon her than does her William; her absence will make away with me as well as thee. If she offers to remove  
25 thee, I’ll jump into these waves to lay hold on thee; her, herself, her own dear person, I must never embrace again. Still do you hear me without one smile?—it is too much to bear.” He had no sooner spoke these words, but he made an offer of throwing himself into the  
30 water; at which his mistress started up, and at the next instant he jumped across the fountain and met her in an embrace. She, half recovering from her fright, said in the most charming voice imaginable, and with a tone of complaint, “I thought how well you would drown your-

self. No, no, you won't drown yourself till you have taken your leave of Susan Holliday." The huntsman, with a tenderness that spoke the most passionate love, and with his cheek close to hers, whispered the softest vows of fidelity in her ear, and cried, "Don't, my dear, 5 believe a word Kate Willow says; she is spiteful and makes stories, because she loves to hear me talk to herself for your sake."

"Look you there," quoth Sir Roger, "do you see there, all mischief comes from confidantes! But let us 10 not interrupt them; the maid is honest, and the man dare not be otherwise, for he knows I loved her father; I will interpose in this matter, and hasten the wedding. Kate Willow is a witty, mischievous wench in the neighborhood, who was a beauty; and makes me hope I shall 15 see the perverse widow in her condition. She was so flippant with her answers to all the honest fellows that came near her and so very vain of her beauty that she has valued herself upon her charms till they are ceased. She therefore now makes it her business to prevent other 20 young women from being more discreet than she was herself. However, the saucy thing said the other day well enough, 'Sir Roger and I must make a match, for we are both despised by those we loved.' The hussy has a great deal of power wherever she comes, and has her 25 share of cunning.

"However, when I reflect upon this woman, I do not know whether, in the main, I am the worse for having loved her; whenever she is recalled to my imagination, my youth returns, and I feel a forgotten warmth in my 30 veins. This affliction in my life has streaked all my conduct with a softness of which I should otherwise have been incapable. It is, perhaps, to this dear image in my heart owing, that I am apt to relent, that I easily



And here, in the first place, I must observe a very great revolution that has happened in this article of good breeding. Several obliging deferences, condescensions, and submissions, with many outward forms and ceremonies that accompany them, were first of all brought 5 up among the politer part of mankind, who lived in courts and cities, and distinguished themselves from the rustic part of the species—who on all occasions acted bluntly and naturally—by such a mutual complaisance and intercourse of civilities. These forms of conversa- 10 tion by degrees multiplied and grew troublesome; the modish world found too great a constraint in them, and have therefore thrown most of them aside. Conversation, like the Romish religion, was so encumbered with show and ceremony, that it stood in need of a reforma- 15 tion to retrench its superfluities, and restore it to its natural good sense and beauty. At present, therefore, an unconstrained carriage, and a certain openness of behavior are the height of good breeding. The fashionable world is grown free and easy; our manners sit more 20 loose upon us; nothing is so modish as an agreeable negligence. In a word, good breeding shows itself most where, to an ordinary eye, it appears the least.

If after this we look on the people of mode in the country, we find in them the manners of the last age. 25 They have no sooner fetched themselves up to the fashion of the polite world but the town has dropped them, and are nearer to the first stage of nature than to those refinements which formerly reigned in the court and still prevail in the country. One may now know a man that never 30 conversed in the world by his excess of good breeding. A polite country squire shall make you as many bows in half an hour as would serve a courtier for a week. There is infinitely more to do about place and precedence



in a meeting of justices' wives than in an assembly of duchesses.

This rural politeness is very troublesome to a man of my temper, who generally take the chair that is next me, 5 and walk first or last, in the front or in the rear, as chance directs. I have known my friend Sir Roger's dinner almost cold before the company could adjust the ceremonial, and be prevailed upon to sit down; and have heartily pitied my old friend when I have seen him 10 forced to pick and cull his guests, as they sat at the several parts of his table, that he might drink their healths according to their respective ranks and qualities. Honest Will Wimble, who I should have thought had been altogether uninfected with ceremony, gives me abun- 15 dance of trouble in this particular. Though he has been fishing all the morning, he will not help himself at dinner till I am served. When we are going out of the hall, he runs behind me; and last night, as we were walking in the fields, stopped short at a stile till I came up to 20 it, and upon my making signs to him to get over, told me, with a serious smile, that, sure, I believed they had no manners in the country.

There has happened another revolution in the point of good breeding, which relates to the conversation among 25 men of mode, and which I cannot but look upon as very extraordinary. It was certainly one of the first distinctions of a well-bred man to express everything that had the most remote appearance of being obscene in modest terms and distant phrases; whilst the clown, who had no such 30 delicacy of conception and expression, clothed his ideas in most plain, homely terms that were the most obvious and natural. This kind of good manners was perhaps carried to an excess, so as to make conversation too stiff, formal, and precise; for which reason—as hypocrisy in

one age is generally succeeded by atheism in another— conversation is in a great measure relapsed into the first extreme; so that at present several of our men of the town, and particularly those who have been polished in France, make use of the most coarse, uncivilized words in 5 our language, and utter themselves often in such a manner as a clown would blush to hear.

This infamous piece of good breeding which reigns among the coxcombs of the town has not yet made its way into the country; and as it is impossible for such an 10 irrational way of conversation to last long among a people that make any profession of religion, or show of modesty, if the country gentlemen get into it they will certainly be left in the lurch. Their good breeding will come too late to them, and they will be thought a parcel 15 of lewd clowns, while they fancy themselves talking together like men of wit and pleasure.

As the two points of good breeding which I have hitherto insisted upon regard behavior and conversation, there is a third which turns upon dress. In this, too, the 20 country are very much behindhand. The rural beaux are not yet got out of the fashion that took place at the time of the Revolution, but ride about the country in red coats and laced hats, while the women in many parts are still trying to outvie one another in the height of their 25 head-dresses.

But a friend of mine, who is now upon the western circuit, having promised to give me an account of the several modes and fashions that prevail in the different parts of the nation through which he passes, I shall defer 30 the enlarging upon this last topic till I have received a letter from him, which I expect every post. L.

## XVII. SIR ROGER AT THE ASSIZES

[No. 122. Friday, July 20, 1711. ADDISON.]

Comes iucundus in via pro vehiculo est.

PUBL. SYR.

A MAN'S first care should be to avoid the reproaches of his own heart; his next, to escape the censures of the world. If the last interferes with the former, it ought to be entirely neglected; but otherwise there cannot be a  
 5 greater satisfaction to an honest mind than to see those approbations which it gives itself seconded by the applauses of the public. A man is more sure of his conduct when the verdict which he passes upon his own behavior is thus warranted and confirmed by the opinion of all  
 10 that know him.

My worthy friend Sir Roger is one of those who is not only at peace within himself, but beloved and esteemed by all about him. He receives a suitable tribute for his universal benevolence to mankind in the returns of affec-  
 15 tion and good-will which are paid him by every one that lives within his neighborhood. I lately met with two or three odd instances of that general respect which is shown to the good old knight. He would needs carry Will Wimble and myself with him to the county assizes. As  
 20 we were upon the road, Will Wimble joined a couple of plain men who rid before us, and conversed with them for some time; during which my friend Sir Roger acquainted me with their characters.

"The first of them," says he, "that has a spaniel by  
 25 his side, is a yeoman of about an hundred pounds a year, an honest man. He is just within the Game Act and

qualified to kill an hare or a pheasant. He knocks down a dinner with his gun twice or thrice a week, and by that means lives much cheaper than those who have not so good an estate as himself. He would be a good neighbor if he did not destroy so many partridges; in short, he is a very sensible man, shoots flying, and has been several times foreman of the petty jury. 5

"The other that rides along with him is Tom Touchy, a fellow famous for taking the law of everybody. There is not one in the town where he lives that he has not sued at a quarter sessions. The rogue had once the impudence to go to law with the widow. His head is full of costs, damages, and ejectments. He plagued a couple of honest gentlemen so long for a trespass in breaking one of his hedges, till he was forced to sell the ground it enclosed to defray the charges of the prosecution. His father left him fourscore pounds a year, but he has cast and been cast so often that he is not now worth thirty. I suppose he is going upon the old business of the willow tree." 15

As Sir Roger was giving me this account of Tom Touchy, Will Wimble and his two companions stopped short till we came up to them. After having paid their respects to Sir Roger, Will told him that Mr. Touchy and he must appeal to him upon a dispute that arose between them. Will, it seems, had been giving his fellow-traveler an account of his angling one day in such a hole; when Tom Touchy, instead of hearing out his story, told him that Mr. Such-an-one, if he pleased, might take the law of him for fishing in that part of the river. My friend Sir Roger heard them both, upon a round trot; and after having paused some time, told them, with the air of a man who would not give his judgment rashly, that much might be said on both sides. They were neither of them dissatisfied with the knight's determination, because neither 20 25 30

## 76 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

of them found himself in the wrong by it. Upon which we made the best of our way to the assizes.

The court was sat before Sir Roger came; but notwithstanding all the justices had taken their places upon the 5 bench, they made room for the old knight at the head of them; who, for his reputation in the country, took occasion to whisper in the judge's ear that he was glad his lordship had met with so much good weather in his circuit. I was listening to the proceedings of the court with 10 much attention, and infinitely pleased with that great appearance and solemnity which so properly accompanies such a public administration of our laws, when, after about an hour's sitting, I observed, to my great surprise, in the midst of a trial, that my friend Sir Roger was getting up 15 to speak. I was in some pain for him, till I found he had acquitted himself of two or three sentences with a look of much business and great intrepidity.

Upon his first rising, the court was hushed, and a general whisper ran among the country people that Sir Roger 20 was up. The speech he made was so little to the purpose that I shall not trouble my readers with an account of it; and I believe was not so much designed by the knight himself to inform the court, as to give him a figure in my eye, and keep up his credit in the country.

25 I was highly delighted, when the court rose, to see the gentlemen of the country gathering about my old friend, and striving who should compliment him most; at the same time that the ordinary people gazed upon him at a distance, not a little admiring his courage, that was not 30 afraid to speak to the judge.

In our return home we met with a very odd accident which I cannot forbear relating, because it shows how desirous all who know Sir Roger are of giving him marks of their esteem. When we arrived upon the verge of his

estate, we stopped at a little inn to rest ourselves and our horses. The man of the house had, it seems, been formerly a servant in the knight's family; and, to do honor to his old master, had some time since, unknown to Sir Roger, put him up in a sign-post before the door; so that the knight's head had hung out upon the road about a week before he himself knew anything of the matter. As soon as Sir Roger was acquainted with it, finding that his servant's indiscretion proceeded wholly from affection and good-will, he only told him that he had made him too high a compliment; and when the fellow seemed to think that could hardly be, added with a more decisive look, that it was too great an honor for any man under a duke; but told him at the same time that it might be altered with a very few touches, and that he himself would be at the charge of it. Accordingly they got a painter, by the knight's directions, to add a pair of whiskers to the face, and by a little aggravation of the features to change it into the Saracen's Head. I should not have known this story had not the innkeeper, upon Sir Roger's alighting, told him in my hearing that his honor's head was brought back last night with the alterations that he had ordered to be made in it. Upon this, my friend, with his usual cheerfulness, related the particulars above mentioned, and ordered the head to be brought into the room. I could not forbear discovering greater expressions of mirth than ordinary upon the appearance of this monstrous face, under which, notwithstanding it was made to frown and stare in a most extraordinary manner, I could still discover a distant resemblance of my old friend. Sir Roger, upon seeing me laugh, desired me to tell him truly if I thought it possible for people to know him in that disguise. I at first kept my usual silence; but upon the knight's conjuring me to tell him whether it was not

still more like himself than a Saracen, I composed my countenance in the best manner I could, and replied that much might be said on both sides.

These several adventures, with the knight's behavior  
 5 in them, gave me as pleasant a day as ever I met with in any of my travels. L.

## XVIII. EUDOXUS AND LEONTINE

[No. 123. Saturday, July 21, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Doctrina sed vim promovet insitam,  
 Rectique cultus pectora roborant;  
 Utcunque defecere mores,  
 Dedecorant bene nata culpae.*

HOR.

As I was yesterday taking the air with my friend Sir Roger, we were met by a fresh-colored, ruddy young man, who rid by us full speed, with a couple of servants behind  
 10 him. Upon my inquiry who he was, Sir Roger told me that he was a young gentleman of a considerable estate, who had been educated by a tender mother, that lives not many miles from the place where we were. She is a very good lady, says my friend, but took so much care of  
 15 her son's health, that she has made him good for nothing. She quickly found that reading was bad for his eyes, and that writing made his head ache. He was let loose among the woods as soon as he was able to ride on horse-back, or to carry a gun upon his shoulder. To be brief,  
 20 I found by my friend's account of him, that he had got a great stock of health, but nothing else; and that, if it were a man's business only to live, there would not be a more accomplished young fellow in the whole country.

The truth of it is, since my residing in these parts, I have seen and heard innumerable instances of young heirs and elder brothers who—either from their own reflecting upon the estates they are born to, and therefore thinking all other accomplishments unnecessary, or from 5 hearing these notions frequently inculcated to them by the flattery of their servants and domestics, or from the same foolish thought prevailing in those who have the care of their education—are of no manner of use but to keep up their families and transmit their lands and houses in a 10 line to posterity.

This makes me often think on a story I have heard of two friends, which I shall give my reader at large under feigned names. The moral of it may, I hope, be useful, though there are some circumstances which make it rather 15 appear like a novel than a true story.

Eudoxus and Leontine began the world with small estates. They were both of them men of good sense and great virtue. They prosecuted their studies together in their earlier years, and entered into such a friendship 20 as lasted to the end of their lives. Eudoxus, at his first setting out in the world, threw himself into a court, where by his natural endowments and his acquired abilities he made his way from one post to another, till at length he had raised a very considerable fortune. Leontine, on the 25 contrary, sought all opportunities of improving his mind by study, conversation, and travel. He was not only acquainted with all the sciences, but with the most eminent professors of them throughout Europe. He knew perfectly well the interests of its princes, with the cus- 30 toms and fashions of their courts, and could scarce meet with the name of an extraordinary person in the *Gazette* whom he had not either talked to or seen. In short, he had so well mixed and digested his knowledge of men



## 80      The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

and books, that he made one of the most accomplished persons of his age. During the whole course of his studies and travels, he kept up a punctual correspondence with Eudoxus, who often made himself acceptable to the  
5 principal men about court by the intelligence which he received from Leontine. When they were both turned of forty—an age in which, according to Mr. Cowley, “there is no dallying with life”—they determined, pursuant to the resolution they had taken in the beginning of their  
10 lives, to retire, and pass the remainder of their days in the country. In order to this, they both of them married much about the same time. Leontine, with his own and his wife’s fortune, bought a farm of three hundred a year, which lay within the neighborhood of his friend Eudoxus,  
15 who had purchased an estate of as many thousands. They were both of them fathers about the same time, Eudoxus having a son born to him, and Leontine a daughter; but, to the unspeakable grief of the latter, his young wife, in whom all his happiness was wrapt up, died  
20 in a few days after the birth of her daughter. His affliction would have been insupportable had not he been comforted by the daily visits and conversations of his friend. As they were one day talking together with their usual intimacy, Leontine considering how incapable he  
25 was of giving his daughter a proper education in his own house, and Eudoxus reflecting on the ordinary behavior of a son who knows himself to be the heir of a great estate, they both agreed upon an exchange of children: namely, that the boy should be bred up with Leontine as  
30 his son, and that the girl should live with Eudoxus as his daughter, till they were each of them arrived at years of discretion. The wife of Eudoxus, knowing that her son could not be so advantageously brought up as under the care of Leontine, and considering at the same time that

he would be perpetually under her own eye, was by degrees prevailed upon to fall in with the project. She therefore took Leonilla, for that was the name of the girl, and educated her as her own daughter. The two friends on each side had wrought themselves to such an habitual 5 tenderness for the children who were under their direction, that each of them had the real passion of a father where the title was but imaginary. Florio, the name of the young heir that lived with Leontine, though he had all the duty and affection imaginable for his supposed 10 parent, was taught to rejoice at the sight of Eudoxus, who visited his friend very frequently, and was dictated by his natural affection, as well as by the rules of prudence, to make himself esteemed and beloved by Florio. The boy was now old enough to know his supposed 15 father's circumstances, and that therefore he was to make his way in the world by his own industry. This consideration grew stronger in him every day, and produced so good an effect that he applied himself with more than ordinary attention to the pursuit of everything which 20 Leontine recommended to him. His natural abilities, which were very good, assisted by the directions of so excellent a counselor, enabled him to make a quicker progress than ordinary through all the parts of his education. Before he was twenty years of age, having finished 25 his studies and exercises with great applause, he was removed from the university to the Inns of Court, where there are very few that make themselves considerable proficient in the studies of the place who know they shall arrive at great estates without them. This was not 30 Florio's case; he found that three hundred a year was but a poor estate for Leontine and himself to live upon, so that he studied without intermission till he gained a very good insight into the constitution and laws of his country.

I should have told my reader that whilst Florio lived at the house of his foster-father he was always an acceptable guest in the family of Eudoxus, where he became acquainted with Leonilla from her infancy. His acquaintance with her by degrees grew into love, which in a mind trained up in all the sentiments of honor and virtue became a very uneasy passion. He despaired of gaining an heiress of so great a fortune, and would rather have died than attempted it by any indirect methods. Leonilla, who was a woman of the greatest beauty joined with the greatest modesty, entertained at the same time a secret passion for Florio, but conducted herself with so much prudence that she never gave him the least intimation of it. Florio was now engaged in all those arts and improvements that are proper to raise a man's private fortune and give him a figure in his country, but secretly tormented with that passion which burns with the greatest fury in a virtuous and noble heart, when he received a sudden summons from Leontine to repair to him into the country the next day. For it seems Eudoxus was so filled with the report of his son's reputation that he could no longer withhold making himself known to him. The morning after his arrival at the house of his supposed father, Leontine told him that Eudoxus had something of great importance to communicate to him; upon which the good man embraced him and wept. Florio was no sooner arrived at the great house that stood in his neighborhood but Eudoxus took him by the hand, after the first salutes were over, and conducted him into his closet. He there opened to him the whole secret of his parentage and education, concluding after this manner: "I have no other way left of acknowledging my gratitude to Leontine than by marrying you to his daughter. He shall not lose the pleasure of being your father by the discovery I have

made to you. Leonilla, too, shall be still my daughter; her filial piety, though misplaced, has been so exemplary that it deserves the greatest reward I can confer upon it. You shall have the pleasure of seeing a great estate fall to you, which you would have lost the relish of had you 5 known yourself born to it. Continue only to deserve it in the same manner you did before you were possessed of it. I have left your mother in the next room. Her heart yearns towards you. She is making the same discoveries to Leonilla which I have made to yourself." Florio was 10 so overwhelmed with this profusion of happiness that he was not able to make reply, but threw himself down at his father's feet, and amidst a flood of tears kissed and embraced his knees, asking his blessing, and expressing in dumb show those sentiments of love, duty, and gratitude 15 that were too big for utterance. To conclude, the happy pair were married, and half Eudoxus' estate settled upon them. Leontine and Eudoxus passed the remainder of their lives together; and received in the dutiful and affectionate behavior of Florio and Leonilla the just recom- 20 pense, as well as the natural effects, of that care which they had bestowed upon them in their education. L.

## XIX. THE EVILS OF PARTY SPIRIT

[No. 125. Tuesday, July 24, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Ne pueri, ne tanta animis assuescite bella:  
Neu patriae validas in viscera vertite vires.*

VIRG.

My worthy friend Sir Roger, when we are talking of the malice of parties, very frequently tells us an accident that happened to him when he was a schoolboy, which 25

was at a time when the feuds ran high between the Round-heads and Cavaliers. This worthy knight, being then but a stripling, had occasion to inquire which was the way to St. Anne's Lane; upon which the person whom he spoke  
 5 to, instead of answering his question, called him a young popish cur, and asked him who had made Anne a saint. The boy, being in some confusion, inquired of the next he met, which was the way to Anne's Lane; but was called a prick-eared cur for his pains, and instead of being shown  
 10 the way, was told that she had been a saint before he was born, and would be one after he was hanged. "Upon this," says Sir Roger, "I did not think fit to repeat the former question, but going into every lane of the neighborhood, asked what they called the name of that lane."  
 15 By which ingenious artifice, he found out the place he inquired after without giving offence to any party. Sir Roger generally closes this narrative with reflections on the mischief that parties do in the country; how they spoil good neighborhood, and make honest gentlemen hate one  
 20 another; besides that, they manifestly tend to the prejudice of the land-tax, and the destruction of the game.

There cannot a greater judgment befall a country than such a dreadful spirit of division as rends a government into two distinct people, and makes them greater stran-  
 25 gers and more averse to one another than if they were actually two different nations. The effects of such a division are pernicious to the last degree, not only with regard to those advantages which they give the common enemy, but to those private evils which they produce in the heart  
 30 of almost every particular person. This influence is very fatal both to men's morals and their understandings; it sinks the virtue of a nation, and not only so, but destroys even common sense.

A furious party spirit, when it rages in its full violence,

exerts itself in civil war and bloodshed; and when it is under its greatest restraints naturally breaks out in falsehood, detraction, calumny, and a partial administration of justice. In a word, it fills a nation with spleen and rancor, and extinguishes all the seeds of good-nature, 5 compassion, and humanity.

Plutarch says, very finely, that a man should not allow himself to hate even his enemies; "because," says he, "if you indulge this passion in some occasions, it will rise of itself in others; if you hate your enemies, you will con- 10 tract such a vicious habit of mind as by degrees will break out upon those who are your friends, or those who are indifferent to you." I might here observe how admirably this precept of morality—which derives the malignity of hatred from the passion itself, and not from its object— 15 answers to that great rule which was dictated to the world about an hundred years before this philosopher wrote; but instead of that, I shall only take notice, with a real grief of heart, that the minds of many good men among us appear soured with party principles, and alienated from 20 one another in such a manner as seems to me altogether inconsistent with the dictates either of reason or religion. Zeal for a public cause is apt to breed passions in the hearts of virtuous persons to which the regard of their own private interest would never have betrayed them. 25

If this party spirit has so ill an effect on our morals, it has likewise a very great one upon our judgments. We often hear a poor, insipid paper or pamphlet cried up, and sometimes a noble prince depreciated by those who are of a different principle from the author. One who is 30 actuated by this spirit is almost under an incapacity of discerning either real blemishes or beauties. A man of merit in a different principle is like an object seen in two different mediums, that appears crooked or broken

however straight or entire it may be in itself. For this reason, there is scarce a person of any figure in England who does not go by two contrary characters, as opposite to one another as light and darkness. Knowledge and  
 5 learning suffer in a particular manner from this strange prejudice, which at present prevails amongst all ranks and degrees in the British nation. As men formerly became eminent in learned societies by their parts and acquisitions, they now distinguish themselves by the warmth and  
 10 violence with which they espouse their respective parties. Books are valued upon the like consideration: an abusive, scurrilous style passes for satire, and a dull scheme of party notions is called fine writing.

There is one piece of sophistry practised by both sides;  
 15 and that is the taking any scandalous story that has been ever whispered or invented of a private man for a known, undoubted truth, and raising suitable speculations upon it. Calumnies that have been never proved or have been often refuted are the ordinary postulatus of these infamous  
 20 scribblers, upon which they proceed as upon first principles granted by all men, though in their hearts they know they are false, or at best very doubtful. When they have laid these foundations of scurrility, it is no wonder that their superstructure is every way answerable to them. If  
 25 this shameless practice of the present age endures much longer, praise and reproach will cease to be motives of action in good men.

There are certain periods of time in all governments when this inhuman spirit prevails. Italy was long torn in  
 30 pieces by the Guelphs and Ghibellines, and France by those who were for and against the League; but it is very unhappy for a man to be born in such a stormy and tempestuous season. It is the restless ambition of artful men that thus breaks a people into factions, and draws several

well-meaning persons to their interest by a specious concern for their country. How many honest minds are filled with uncharitable and barbarous notions out of their zeal for the public good! What cruelties and outrages would they not commit against men of an adverse party, 5 whom they would honor and esteem, if, instead of considering them as they are represented, they knew them as they are! Thus are persons of the greatest probity seduced into shameful errors and prejudices, and made bad men even by that noblest of principles, the "love of their 10 country." I cannot here forbear mentioning the famous Spanish proverb, "If there were neither fools nor knaves in the world, all people would be of one mind."

For my own part, I could heartily wish that all honest men would enter into an association for the support of one 15 another against the endeavors of those whom they ought to look upon as their common enemies, whatsoever side they may belong to. Were there such an honest body of neutral forces, we should never see the worst of men in great figures of life, because they are useful to a party; 20 nor the best unregarded, because they are above practising those methods which would be grateful to their faction. We should then single every criminal out of the herd, and hunt him down, however formidable and overgrown he might appear; on the contrary, we should 25 shelter distressed innocence, and defend virtue, however beset with contempt or ridicule, envy, or defamation. In short, we should not any longer regard our fellow-subjects as Whigs or Tories, but should make the man of merit our friend, and the villain our enemy. C. 30



XX. THE EVILS OF PARTY SPIRIT—*Continued*

[No. 126. Wednesday, July 25, 1711. ADDISON.]

Tros Rutulusve fuat, nullo discrimine habebo.

VIRG.

IN my yesterday's paper I proposed that the honest men of all parties should enter into a kind of association for the defence of one another, and the confusion of their common enemies. As it is designed this neutral body  
 5 should act with a regard to nothing but truth and equity, and divest themselves of the little heats and prepossessions that cleave to parties of all kinds, I have prepared for them the following form of an association, which may express their intentions in the most plain and simple  
 10 manner:

We whose names are hereunto subscribed, do solemnly declare that we do in our consciences believe two and two make four; and that we shall adjudge any man whatsoever to be our enemy who endeavors to persuade us to the contrary. We  
 15 are likewise ready to maintain, with the hazard of all that is near and dear to us, that six is less than seven in all times and all places, and that ten will not be more three years hence than it is at present. We do also firmly declare that it is our resolution as long as we live to call black black, and white  
 20 white; and we shall upon all occasions oppose such persons that upon any day of the year shall call black white, or white black, with the utmost peril of our lives and fortunes.

Were there such a combination of honest men, who without any regard to places would endeavor to extirpate  
 25 all such furious zealots as would sacrifice one half of their country to the passion and interest of the other—as also such infamous hypocrites that are for promoting their

own advantage under color of the public good, with all the profligate, immoral retainers to each side, that have nothing to recommend them but an implicit submission to their leaders—we should soon see that furious party spirit extinguished, which may in time expose us to the 5 derision and contempt of all the nations about us.

A member of this society that would thus carefully employ himself in making room for merit, by throwing down the worthless and depraved part of mankind from those conspicuous stations of life to which they have been 10 sometimes advanced, and all this without any regard to his private interest, would be no small benefactor to his country.

I remember to have read in Diodorus Siculus an account of a very active little animal, which I think he calls 15 the ichneumon, that makes it the whole business of his life to break the eggs of the crocodile, which he is always in search after. This instinct is the more remarkable because the ichneumon never feeds upon the eggs he has broken, nor in any other way finds his account in them. 20 Were it not for the incessant labors of this industrious animal, Egypt, says the historian, would be overrun with crocodiles; for the Egyptians are so far from destroying those pernicious creatures that they worship them as gods.

If we look into the behavior of ordinary partisans, we 25 shall find them far from resembling this disinterested animal, and rather acting after the example of the wild Tartars, who are ambitious of destroying a man of the most extraordinary parts and accomplishments, as thinking that upon his decease the same talents, whatever post 30 they qualified him for, enter of course into his destroyer.

As in the whole train of my speculations I have endeavored, as much as I am able, to extinguish that pernicious spirit of passion and prejudice which rages with

## 90 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

the same violence in all parties, I am still the more desirous of doing some good in this particular because I observe that the spirit of party reigns more in the country than in the town. It here contracts a kind of brutality  
5 and rustic fierceness to which men of a politer conversation are wholly strangers. It extends itself even to the return of the bow and the hat; and at the same time that the heads of parties preserve toward one another an outward show of good breeding, and keep up a perpetual  
10 intercourse of civilities, their tools that are dispersed in these outlying parts will not so much as mingle together at a cock-match. This humor fills the country with several periodical meetings of Whig jockeys and Tory fox hunters, not to mention the innumerable curses, frowns,  
15 and whispers it produces at a quarter sessions.

I do not know whether I have observed in any of my former papers that my friends Sir Roger de Coverley and Sir Andrew Freeport are of different principles; the first of them inclined to the landed, and the other to the  
20 moneyed interest. This humor is so moderate in each of them that it proceeds no farther than to an agreeable raillery, which very often diverts the rest of the club. I find, however, that the knight is a much stronger Tory in the country than in town, which, as he has told me in  
25 my ear, is absolutely necessary for the keeping up his interest. In all our journey from London to his house, we did not so much as bait at a Whig inn; or if by chance the coachman stopped at a wrong place, one of Sir Roger's servants would ride up to his master full  
30 speed, and whisper to him that the master of the house was against such an one in the last election. This often betrayed us into hard beds and bad cheer; for we were not so inquisitive about the inn as the innkeeper, and provided our landlord's principles were sound, did not

take any notice of the staleness of his provisions. This I found still the more inconvenient because the better the host was, the worse generally were his accommodations, the fellow knowing very well that those who were his friends would take up with coarse diet and an hard 5 lodging. For these reasons, all the while I was upon the road I dreaded entering into a house of any one that Sir Roger had applauded for an honest man.

Since my stay at Sir Roger's in the country, I daily find more instance of this narrow party humor. Being upon a 10 bowling green at a neighboring market town the other day—for that is the place where the gentlemen of one side meet once a week—I observed a stranger among them of a better presence and genteeler behavior than ordinary, but was much surprised that, notwithstanding he was a 15 very fair better, nobody would take him up. But upon inquiry, I found that he was one who had given a disagreeable vote in a former parliament, for which reason there was not a man upon that bowling green who would have so much correspondence with him as to win his 20 money of him.

Among other instances of this nature, I must not omit one which concerns myself. Will Wimble was the other day relating several strange stories, that he had picked up, nobody knows where, of a certain great man; and upon 25 my staring at him, as one that was surprised to hear such things in the country, which had never been so much as whispered in the town, Will stopped short in the thread of his discourse, and after dinner asked my friend Sir Roger in his ear if he was sure that I was not a 30 fanatic.

It gives me a serious concern to see such a spirit of dissension in the country; not only as it destroys virtue and common sense, and renders us in a manner barbarians

## 92 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

towards one another, but as it perpetuates our animosities, widens our breaches, and transmits our present passions and prejudices to our posterity. For my own part, I am sometimes afraid that I discover the seeds of a civil war  
5 in these our divisions, and therefore cannot but bewail, as in their first principles, the miseries and calamities of our children.  
C.

### XXI. SIR ROGER AND THE GYPSIES

[No. 130. Monday, July 30, 1711. ADDISON.]

Semperque recentes  
Convectare juvat praedas, et vivere rapto.

VIRG.

As I was yesterday riding out in the fields with my friend Sir Roger, we saw at a little distance from us a  
10 troop of gypsies. Upon the first discovery of them, my friend was in some doubt whether he should not exert the justice of the peace upon such a band of lawless vagrants; but not having his clerk with him, who is a necessary counselor on these occasions, and fearing that his poultry  
15 might fare the worse for it, he let the thought drop; but at the same time gave me a particular account of the mischiefs they do in the country, in stealing people's goods and spoiling their servants. "If a stray piece of linen hangs upon an hedge," says Sir Roger, "they are sure to  
20 have it; if a hog loses his way in the fields, it is ten to one but he becomes their prey; our geese cannot live in peace for them; if a man prosecutes them with severity, his hen-roost is sure to pay for it. They generally straggle into these parts about this time of the year, and set the  
25 heads of our servant-maids so agog for husbands that we do not expect to have any business done as it should be

whilst they are in the country. I have an honest dairy-  
 maid who crosses their hands with a piece of silver every  
 summer, and never fails being promised the handsomest  
 young fellow in the parish for her pains. Your friend  
 the butler has been fool enough to be seduced by them; 5  
 and though he is sure to lose a knife, a fork, or a spoon  
 every time his fortune is told him, generally shuts himself  
 up in the pantry with an old gypsy for above half an hour  
 once in a twelvemonth. Sweethearts are the things they  
 live upon, which they bestow very plentifully upon all 10  
 those that apply themselves to them. You see now and then  
 some handsome young jades among them; the wenches  
 have very often white teeth and black eyes."

Sir Roger, observing that I listened with great attention  
 to his account of a people who were so entirely new to me, 15  
 told me that if I would they should tell us our fortunes.  
 As I was very well pleased with the knight's proposal,  
 we rid up and communicated our hands to them. A  
 Cassandra of the crew, after having examined my lines  
 very diligently, told me that I loved a pretty maid in a 20  
 corner; that I was a good woman's man; with some  
 other particulars which I do not think proper to relate.  
 My friend Sir Roger alighted from his horse, and expos-  
 ing his palm to two or three that stood by him, they  
 crumpled it into all shapes, and diligently scanned every 25  
 wrinkle that could be made in it; when one of them, who  
 was older and more sunburnt than the rest, told him that  
 he had a widow in his line of life; upon which the knight  
 cried, "Go, go, you are an idle baggage!" and at the  
 same time smiled upon me. The gypsy, finding he was 30  
 not displeased in his heart, told him, after a farther in-  
 quiry into his hand, that his true love was constant, and  
 that she should dream of him to-night. My old friend  
 cried "Pish!" and bid her go on. The gypsy told him

## 94 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

that he was a bachelor, but would not be so long; and that he was dearer to somebody than he thought. The knight still repeated she was an idle baggage, and bid her go on. "Ah, master," says the gypsy, "that roguish leer  
5 of yours makes a pretty woman's heart ache; you ha'n't that simper about the mouth for nothing." The uncouth gibberish with which all this was uttered, like the darkness of an oracle, made us the more attentive to it. To be short, the knight left the money with her that he  
10 had crossed her hand with, and got up again on his horse.

As we were riding away, Sir Roger told me that he knew several sensible people who believed these gypsies now and then foretold very strange things; and for half  
15 an hour together appeared more jocund than ordinary. In the height of his good humor, meeting a common beggar upon the road who was no conjurer, as he went to relieve him, he found his pocket was picked; that being a kind of palmistry at which this race of vermin are very  
20 dextrous.

I might here entertain my reader with historical remarks on this idle, profligate people, who infest all the countries of Europe, and live in the midst of governments in a kind of commonwealth by themselves. But instead  
25 of entering into observations of this nature, I shall fill the remaining part of my paper with a story which is still fresh in Holland, and was printed in one of our monthly accounts about twenty years ago:

"As the trekschuyt, or hackney-boat, which carries passengers from Leyden to Amsterdam, was putting off, a boy running along the side of the canal desired to be taken in; which the master of the boat refused, because the lad had not quite money enough to pay the usual fare. An eminent merchant, being pleased with the looks of the boy and secretly touched

with compassion towards him, paid the money for him, and ordered him to be taken on board.

"Upon talking with him afterwards, he found that he could speak readily in three or four languages, and learned upon farther examination that he had been stolen away when he was 5 a child, by a gypsy, and had rambled ever since with a gang of those strollers up and down several parts of Europe. It happened that the merchant, whose heart seems to have inclined towards the boy by a secret kind of instinct, had himself lost a child some years before. The parents, after a long 10 search for him, gave him for drowned in one of the canals with which that country abounds; and the mother was so afflicted at the loss of a fine boy, who was her only son, that she died for grief of it.

"Upon laying together all the particulars, and examining the 15 several moles and marks by which the mother used to describe the child when he was first missing, the boy proved to be the son of the merchant whose heart had so unaccountably melted at the sight of him. The lad was well pleased to find a father, who was so rich, and likely to leave him a good 20 estate; the father, on the other hand, was not a little delighted to see a son return to him, whom he had given for lost, with such a strength of constitution, sharpness of understanding, and skill in languages."

Here the printed story leaves off; but if I may give 25 credit to reports, our linguist having received such extraordinary rudiments towards a good education, was afterwards trained up in everything that becomes a gentleman; wearing off by little and little all the vicious habits and practices that he had been used to in the course of his 30 peregrinations. Nay, it is said that he has since been employed in foreign courts upon national business, with great reputation to himself and honor to those who sent him, and that he has visited several countries as a public minister, in which he formerly wandered as a gypsy. 35

C.



## XXII. MR. SPECTATOR DECIDES TO RETURN TO LONDON

[No. 131. Tuesday, July 31, 1711. ADDISON.]

*Ipsae rursum concedite silvae.*

VIRG.

It is usual for a man who loves country sports to preserve the game in his own grounds, and divert himself upon those that belong to his neighbor. My friend Sir Roger generally goes two or three miles from his house, 5 and gets into the frontiers of his estate, before he beats about in search of an hare or partridge, on purpose to spare his own fields, where he is always sure of finding diversion when the worst comes to the worst. By this means the breed about his house has time to increase 10 and multiply; besides that, the sport is the more agreeable where the game is the harder to come at, and does not lie so thick as to produce any perplexity or confusion in the pursuit. For these reasons the country gentleman, like the fox, seldom preys near his own home.

15 In the same manner I have made a month's excursion out of the town, which is the great field of game for sportsmen of my species, to try my fortune in the country, where I have started several subjects and hunted them down, with some pleasure to myself, and I hope to 20 others. I am here forced to use a great deal of diligence before I can spring anything to my mind; whereas in town, whilst I am following one character, it is ten to one but I am crossed in my way by another, and put up such a variety of odd creatures in both sexes that they 25 foil the scent of one another and puzzle the chase. My

greatest difficulty in the country is to find sport, and in town to choose it. In the meantime, as I have given a whole month's rest to the cities of London and Westminster, I promise myself abundance of new game upon my return thither. 5

It is indeed high time for me to leave the country, since I find the whole neighborhood begin to grow very inquisitive after my name and character, my love of solitude, taciturnity, and particular way of life, having raised a great curiosity in all these parts. 10

The notions which have been framed of me are various; some look upon me as very proud, and some as very melancholy. Will Wimble, as my friend the butler tells me, observing me very much alone, and extremely silent when I am in company, is afraid I have killed a 15 man. The country people seem to suspect me for a conjurer; and some of them hearing of the visit which I made to Moll White, will needs have it that Sir Roger has brought down a cunning man with him, to cure the old woman, and free the country from her charms. So that 20 the character which I go under in part of the neighborhood is what they here call a "White Witch."

A justice of peace, who lives about five miles off, and is not of Sir Roger's party, has, it seems, said twice or thrice at his table that he wishes Sir Roger does not 25 harbor a Jesuit in his house, and that he thinks the gentlemen of the country would do very well to make me give some account of myself.

On the other side, some of Sir Roger's friends are afraid the old knight is imposed upon by a designing 30 fellow, and as they have heard that he converses very promiscuously when he is in town, do not know but he has brought down with him some discarded Whig, that is sullen and says nothing because he is out of place.

Such is the variety of opinions which are here entertained of me, so that I pass among some for a disaffected person, and among others for a popish priest; among some for a wizard, and among others for a murderer; and  
 5 all this for no other reason, that I can imagine, but because I do not hoot and hollow and make a noise. It is true my friend Sir Roger tells them that it is my way, and that I am only a philosopher; but that will not satisfy them. They think there is more in me than he dis-  
 10 covers, and that I do not hold my tongue for nothing.

For these and other reasons I shall set out for London to-morrow, having found by experience that the country is not a place for a person of my temper, who does not love jollity, and what they call "good neighborhood."  
 15 A man that is out of humor when an unexpected guest breaks in upon him and does not care for sacrificing an afternoon to every chance comer, that will be the master of his own time and the pursuer of his own inclinations, makes but a very unsociable figure in this kind of life. I  
 20 shall therefore retire into the town, if I may make use of that phrase, and get into the crowd again as fast as I can, in order to be alone. I can there raise what speculations I please upon others without being observed myself, and at the same time enjoy all the advantages of company  
 25 with all the privileges of solitude. In the meanwhile, to finish the month, and conclude these my rural speculations, I shall here insert a letter from my friend Will Honeycomb, who has not lived a month for these forty years out of the smoke of London, and rallies me after  
 30 his way upon my country life.

"DEAR SPEC.,

I suppose this letter will find thee picking of daisies, or smelling to a lock of hay, or passing away thy time in some innocent country diversion of the like nature. I have, how-

ever, orders from the club to summon thee up to town, being all of us cursedly afraid thou wilt not be able to relish our company after thy conversations with Moll White and Will Wimble. Pr'ythee don't send us up any more stories of a cock and a bull, nor frighten the town with spirits 5 and witches. Thy speculations begin to smell confoundedly of woods and meadows. If thou dost not come up quickly, we shall conclude that thou art in love with one of Sir Roger's dairy-maids. Service to the knight. Sir Andrew is grown the cock of the club since he left us, and if he does not return 10 quickly will make every mother's son of us Commonwealth's men.

Dear Spec, thine eternally,

WILL HONEYCOMB."

C. 15

### XXIII. THE JOURNEY TO LONDON

[No. 132. Wednesday, August 1, 1711. STEELE.]

Qui aut tempus quid postulet non videt, aut plura loquitur, aut se ostentat, aut eorum quibuscum est rationem non habet, is ineptus esse dicitur.

TULL.

HAVING notified to my good friend Sir Roger that I should set out for London the next day, his horses were ready at the appointed hour in the evening; and attended by one of his grooms, I arrived at the county town at twilight, in order to be ready for the stage-coach the day 20 following. As soon as we arrived at the inn, the servant who waited upon me inquired of the chamberlain, in my hearing, what company he had for the coach. The fellow answered, "Mrs. Betty Arable, the great fortune, and the widow, her mother; a recruiting officer—who took a 25 place because they were to go; young Squire Quickset, her cousin—that her mother wished her to be married to; Ephraim, the Quaker, her guardian; and a gentle-

man that had studied himself dumb from Sir Roger de Coverley's." I observed, by what he said of myself, that according to his office, he dealt much in intelligence; and doubted not but there was some foundation for his 5 reports of the rest of the company, as well as for the whimsical account he gave of me.

The next morning at daybreak we were all called; and I, who know my own natural shyness, and endeavor to be as little liable to be disputed with as possible, dressed 10 immediately, that I might make no one wait. The first preparation for our setting out was that the captain's half-pike was placed near the coachman, and a drum behind the coach. In the meantime the drummer, the captain's equipage, was very loud that none of the cap- 15 tain's things should be placed so as to be spoiled; upon which his cloak bag was fixed in the seat of the coach; and the captain himself, according to a frequent though invidious behavior of military men, ordered his man to look sharp that none but one of the ladies should have 20 the place he had taken fronting to the coach-box.

We were in some little time fixed in our seats, and sat with that dislike which people not too good-natured usually conceive of each other at first sight. The coach jumbled us insensibly into some sort of familiarity, and 25 we had not moved above two miles when the widow asked the captain what success he had in his recruiting. The officer, with a frankness he believed very graceful, told her that indeed he had but very little luck, and had suffered much by desertion, therefore should be glad to end 30 his warfare in the service of her or her fair daughter. "In a word," continued he, "I am a soldier, and to be plain is my character; you see me, madam, young, sound, and impudent; take me yourself, widow, or give me to her; I will be wholly at your disposal. I am a soldier of

fortune, ha!" This was followed by a vain laugh of his own, and a deep silence of all the rest of the company. I had nothing left for it but to fall fast asleep, which I did with all speed. "Come," said he, "resolve upon it, we will make a wedding at the next town: we will wake this 5 pleasant companion who has fallen asleep, to be the bride-man, and"—giving the Quaker a clap on the knee—he concluded, "this sly saint, who, I'll warrant, understands what's what as well as you or I, widow, shall give the bride as father." 10

The Quaker, who happened to be a man of smartness, answered, "Friend, I take it in good part that thou hast given me the authority of a father over this comely and virtuous child; and I must assure thee that if I have the giving her, I shall not bestow her on thee. Thy mirth, 15 friend, savoreth of folly; thou art a person of a light mind; thy drum is a type of thee—it soundeth because it is empty. Verily, it is not from thy fullness, but thy emptiness, that thou hast spoken this day. Friend, friend, we have hired this coach in partnership with thee, to carry 20 us to the great city; we cannot go any other way. This worthy mother must hear thee if thou wilt needs utter thy follies; we cannot help it, friend, I say; if thou wilt, we must hear thee; but, if thou wert a man of understanding, thou wouldst not take advantage of thy coura- 25 geous countenance to abash us children of peace. Thou art, thou sayest, a soldier; give quarter to us, who cannot resist thee. Why didst thou flee at our friend, who feigned himself asleep? He said nothing, but how dost thou know what he containeth? If thou speakest improper 30 things in the hearing of this virtuous young virgin, consider it is an outrage against a distressed person that cannot get from thee: to speak indiscreetly what we are obliged to hear, by being hasped up with thee in this

public vehicle, is in some degree assaulting on the high road."

Here Ephraim paused, and the captain, with an happy and uncommon impudence—which can be convicted and support itself at the same time—cries, "Faith, friend, I thank thee; I should have been a little impertinent if thou hadst not reprimanded me. Come, thou art, I see, a smoky old fellow, and I'll be very orderly the ensuing part of the journey. I was going to give myself airs; but, 10 ladies, I beg pardon."

The captain was so little out of humor, and our company was so far from being soured by this little ruffle, that Ephraim and he took a particular delight in being agreeable to each other for the future, and assumed their different provinces in the conduct of the company. Our reckonings, apartments, and accommodation fell under Ephraim; and the captain looked to all disputes on the road—as the good behavior of our coachman, and the right we had of taking place as going to London of all 20 vehicles coming from thence.

The occurrences we met with were ordinary, and very little happened which could entertain by the relation of them; but when I considered the company we were in, I took it for no small good fortune that the whole journey 25 was not spent in impertinences, which to one part of us might be an entertainment, to the other a suffering.

What, therefore, Ephraim said when we were almost arrived at London, had to me an air not only of good understanding, but good breeding. Upon the young lady's 30 expressing her satisfaction in the journey, and declaring how delightful it had been to her, Ephraim delivered himself as follows: "There is no ordinary part of human life which expresseth so much a good mind and a right inward man, as his behavior upon meeting with

strangers, especially such as may seem the most unsuitable companions to him; such a man, when he falleth in the way with persons of simplicity and innocence, however knowing he may be in the ways of men, will not vaunt himself thereof; but will the rather hide his superiority to them, that he may not be painful unto them. My good friend," continued he, turning to the officer, "thee and I are to part by and by, and peradventure we may never meet again; but be advised by a plain man: modes and apparel are but trifles to the real man; therefore do not think such a man as thyself terrible for thy garb, nor such a one as me contemptible for mine. When two such as thee and I meet, with affections as we ought to have towards each other, thou shouldst rejoice to see my peaceable demeanor, and I should be glad to see thy strength and ability to protect me in it." T.

## XXIV. SIR ROGER AND SIR ANDREW IN ARGUMENT

[No. 174. Wednesday, Sept. 19, 1711. STEELE.]

*Haec memini et victum frustra contendere Thyrsin.*

VIRG.

THERE is scarce anything more common than animosities between parties that cannot subsist but by their agreement. This was well represented in the sedition of the members of the human body in the old Roman fable. It is often the case of lesser confederate states against a superior power, which are hardly held together, though their unanimity is necessary for their common safety; and this is always the case of the landed and trading interest



of Great Britain; the trader is fed by the product of the land, and the landed man cannot be clothed but by the skill of the trader; and yet those interests are ever jarring.

We had last winter an instance of this at our club in  
 5 Sir Roger de Coverley and Sir Andrew Freeport, between whom there is generally a constant, though friendly, opposition of opinions. It happened that one of the company, in an historical discourse, was observing that Carthaginian faith was a proverbial phrase to intimate breach of leagues.  
 10 Sir Roger said it "could hardly be otherwise; that the Carthaginians were the greatest traders in the world, and as gain is the chief end of such a people—they never pursue any other—the means to it are never regarded. They will, if it comes easily, get money honestly; but if  
 15 not, they will not scruple to attain it by fraud, or cozenage. And, indeed, what is the whole business of the trader's account but to overreach him who trusts to his memory? But were that not so, what can there great and noble be expected from him whose attention is forever fixed upon  
 20 balancing his books and watching over his expenses? And at best let frugality and parsimony be the virtues of the merchant, how much is his punctual dealing below a gentleman's charity to the poor, or hospitality among his neighbors?"

25 Captain Sentry observed Sir Andrew very diligent in hearing Sir Roger, and had a mind to turn the discourse, by taking notice, in general, from the highest to the lowest parts of human society, there was "a secret though unjust way among men of indulging the seeds of ill-nature  
 30 and envy by comparing their own state of life to that of another, and grudging the approach of their neighbor to their own happiness; and on the other side, he who is the less at his ease repines at the other who, he thinks, has unjustly the advantage over him. Thus the civil and

military lists look upon each other with much ill-nature; the soldier repines at the courtier's power, and the courtier rallies the soldier's honor; or, to come to lower instances, the private men in the horse and foot of an army, the carmen and coachmen in the city streets, mutually look upon each other with ill-will, when they are in competition for quarters or the way, in their respective motions."

"It is very well, good captain," interrupted Sir Andrew; "you may attempt to turn the discourse if you think fit; but I must, however, have a word or two with Sir Roger, who, I see, thinks he has paid me off, and been very severe upon the merchant. I shall not," continued he, "at this time remind Sir Roger of the great and noble monuments of charity and public spirit which have been erected by merchants since the Reformation, but at present content myself with what he allows us—parsimony and frugality. If it were consistent with the quality of so ancient a baronet as Sir Roger to keep an account, or measure things by the most infallible way, that of numbers, he would prefer our parsimony to his hospitality. If to drink so many hogsheads is to be hospitable, we do not contend for the fame of that virtue; but it would be worth while to consider whether so many artificers at work ten days together by my appointment, or so many peasants made merry on Sir Roger's charge, are the men more obliged? I believe the families of the artificers will thank me more than the households of the peasants shall Sir Roger. Sir Roger gives to his men, but I place mine above the necessity or obligation of my bounty. I am in very little pain for the Roman proverb upon the Carthaginian traders; the Romans were their professed enemies. I am only sorry no Carthaginian histories have come to our hands; we might have been taught, perhaps,

by them some proverbs against the Roman generosity, in fighting for and bestowing other people's goods. But since Sir Roger has taken occasion from an old proverb to be out of humor with merchants, it should be no offence to offer one not quite so old in their defence.

When a man happens to break in Holland, they say of him that 'he has not kept true accounts.' This phrase, perhaps, among us would appear a soft or humorous way of speaking; but with that exact nation it bears the highest reproach. For a man to be mistaken in the calculation of his expense, in his ability to answer future demands, or to be impertinently sanguine in putting his credit to too great adventure, are all instances of as much infamy as, with gayer nations, to be failing in courage or common honesty.

"Numbers are so much the measure of everything that is valuable that it is not possible to demonstrate the success of any action, or the prudence of any undertaking without them. I say this in answer to what Sir Roger is pleased to say, that 'little that is truly noble can be expected from one who is ever poring on his cashbook or balancing his accounts.' When I have my returns from abroad, I can tell to a shilling by the help of numbers the profit or loss by my adventure; but I ought also to be able to show that I had reason for making it, either from my own experience or that of other people, or from a reasonable presumption that my returns will be sufficient to answer my expense and hazard; and this is never to be done without the skill of numbers. For instance, if I am to trade to Turkey, I ought beforehand to know the demand of our manufactures there, as well as of their silks in England, and the customary prices that are given for both in each country. I ought to have a clear knowledge of these matters beforehand, that I may presume upon

sufficient returns to answer the charge of the cargo I have fitted out, the freight and assurance out and home, the custom to the queen, and the interest of my own money, and besides all these expenses, a reasonable profit to myself. Now what is there of scandal in this skill? 5 What has the merchant done that he should be so little in the good graces of Sir Roger? He throws down no man's enclosure, and tramples upon no man's corn; he takes nothing from the industrious laborer; he pays the poor man for his work; he communicates his profit with 10 mankind; by the preparation of his cargo, and the manufacture of his returns, he furnishes employment and subsistence to greater numbers than the richest nobleman; and even the nobleman is obliged to him for finding out 15 foreign markets for the produce of his estate, and for making a great addition to his rents; and yet it is certain that none of all these things could be done by him without the exercise of his skill in numbers.

"This is the economy of the merchant; and the conduct of the gentleman must be the same, unless by 20 scorning to be the steward, he resolves the steward shall be the gentleman. The gentleman, no more than the merchant, is able, without the help of numbers, to account for the success of any action, or the prudence of any adventure. If, for instance, the chase is his whole adven- 25 ture, his only returns must be the stag's horns in the great hall and the fox's nose upon the stable door. Without doubt Sir Roger knows the full value of these returns; and if beforehand he had computed the charges of the chase, a gentleman of his discretion would cer- 30 tainly have hanged up all his dogs; he would never have brought back so many fine horses to the kennel; he would never have gone so often, like a blast, over fields of corn. If such, too, had been the conduct of all his

## 108 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

ancestors, he might truly have boasted, at this day, that the antiquity of his family had never been sullied by a trade; a merchant had never been permitted with his whole estate to purchase a room for his picture in the gallery of the Coverleys', or to claim his descent from the maid of honor. But 'tis very happy for Sir Roger that the merchant paid so dear for his ambition. 'Tis the misfortune of many other gentlemen to turn out of the seats of their ancestors to make way for such new masters as have been more exact in their accounts than themselves; and certainly he deserves the estate a great deal better who has got it by his industry, than he who has lost it by his negligence."

T. ·

## XXV. SIR ROGER VISITS LONDON

[No. 269. Tuesday, January 8, 1712. ADDISON.]

Aevo rarissima nostro  
Simplicitas.

OVID.

I WAS this morning surprised with a great knocking at the door, when my landlady's daughter came up to me and told me that there was a man below desired to speak with me. Upon my asking her who it was, she told me it was a very grave, elderly person, but that she did not know his name. I immediately went down to him, and found him to be the coachman of my worthy friend Sir Roger de Coverley. He told me that his master came to town last night, and would be glad to take a turn with me in Gray's Inn Walks. As I was wondering in myself what had brought Sir Roger to town, not hav-

ing lately received any letter from him, he told me that his master was come up to get a sight of Prince Eugene, and that he desired I would immediately meet him.

I was not a little pleased with the curiosity of the old knight, though I did not much wonder at it, having heard 5 him say more than once in private discourse that he looked upon Prince Eugenio—for so the knight always calls him—to be a greater man than Scanderbeg.

I was no sooner come into Gray's Inn Walks, but I heard my friend upon the terrace hemming twice or 10 thrice to himself with great vigor, for he loves to clear his pipes in good air—to make use of his own phrase—and is not a little pleased with any one who takes notice of the strength which he still exerts in his morning hems.

I was touched with a secret joy at the sight of the good 15 old man, who before he saw me was engaged in conversation with a beggar-man that had asked an alms of him. I could hear my friend chide him for not finding out some work; but at the same time saw him put his hand in his pocket and give him sixpence. 20

Our salutations were very hearty on both sides, consisting of many kind shakes of the hand, and several affectionate looks which we cast upon one another. After which the knight told me my good friend his chaplain was very well, and much at my service, and that the 25 Sunday before he had made a most incomparable sermon out of Doctor Barrow. "I have left," says he, "all my affairs in his hands, and being willing to lay an obligation upon him, have deposited with him thirty marks, to be distributed among his poor parishioners." 30

He then proceeded to acquaint me with the welfare of Will Wimble. Upon which he put his hand into his fob and presented me, in his name, with a tobacco stopper, telling me that Will had been busy all the beginning of

the winter in turning great quantities of them, and that he made a present of one to every gentleman in the country who has good principles and smokes. He added that poor Will was at present under great tribulation, for  
5 that Tom Touchy had taken the law of him for cutting some hazel sticks out of one of his hedges.

Among other pieces of news which the knight brought from his country-seat, he informed me that Moll White was dead; and that about a month after her death the  
10 wind was so very high that it blew down the end of one of his barns. "But for my own part," says Sir Roger, "I do not think that the old woman had any hand in it."

He afterwards fell into an account of the diversions which had passed in his house during the holidays; for  
15 Sir Roger, after the laudable custom of his ancestors, always keeps open house at Christmas. I learned from him that he had killed eight fat hogs for this season, that he had dealt about his chines very liberally amongst his neighbors, and that in particular he had sent a string of  
20 hog's-puddings with a pack of cards to every poor family in the parish. "I have often thought," says Sir Roger, "it happens very well that Christmas should fall out in the middle of the winter. It is the most dead, uncomfortable time of the year, when the poor people would  
25 suffer very much from their poverty and cold if they had not good cheer, warm fires, and Christmas gambols to support them. I love to rejoice their poor hearts at this season, and to see the whole village merry in my great hall. I allow a double quantity of malt to my small beer,  
30 and set it a running for twelve days to every one that calls for it. I have always a piece of cold beef and a mince-pie upon the table, and am wonderfully pleased to see my tenants pass away a whole evening in playing their innocent tricks, and smutting one another. Our friend Will

Wimble is as merry as any of them, and shows a thousand roguish tricks upon these occasions."

I was very much delighted with the reflection of my old friend, which carried so much goodness in it. He then launched out into the praise of the late Act of Parliament for securing the Church of England, and told me, with great satisfaction, that he believed it already began to take effect, for that a rigid Dissenter, who chanced to dine at his house on Christmas day, had been observed to eat very plentifully of his plum-porridge. 10

After having dispatched all our country matters, Sir Roger made several inquiries concerning the club, and particularly of his old antagonist, Sir Andrew Freeport. He asked me with a kind of smile whether Sir Andrew had not taken advantage of his absence to vent among 15 them some of his republican doctrines; but soon after, gathering up his countenance into a more than ordinary seriousness, "Tell me truly," says he, "don't you think Sir Andrew had a hand in the Pope's Procession?" But without giving me time to answer him, "Well, well," says 20 he, "I know you are a wary man, and do not care to talk of public matters."

The knight then asked me if I had seen Prince Eugenio, and made me promise to get him a stand in some convenient place, where he might have a full sight of that 25 extraordinary man, whose presence does so much honor to the British nation. He dwelt very long on the praises of this great general, and I found that, since I was with him in the country, he had drawn many observations together out of his reading in Baker's *Chronicle*, and 30 other authors who always lie in his hall window, which very much redound to the honor of this prince.

Having passed away the greatest part of the morning in hearing the knight's reflections, which were partly



private and partly political, he asked me if I would smoke a pipe with him over a dish of coffee at Squire's. As I love the old man, I take delight in complying with everything that is agreeable to him, and accordingly waited on  
 5 him to the coffee-house, where his venerable figure drew upon us the eyes of the whole room. He had no sooner seated himself at the upper end of the high table, but he called for a clean pipe, a paper of tobacco, a dish of coffee, a wax candle, and the *Supplement*, with such an  
 10 air of cheerfulness and good humor that all the boys in the coffee-room—who seemed to take pleasure in serving him—were at once employed on his several errands; insomuch that nobody else could come at a dish of tea till the knight had got all his conveniences about him.  
 L.

## XXVI. PIN-MONEY

[No. 295. Thursday, February 7, 1712. ADDISON.]

Prodiga non sentit pereuntem femina censum:  
 At velut exhausta redivivus pullulet arca  
 Nummus, et e pleno semper tollatur acervo,  
 Non unquam reputat quanti sibi gaudia constant.  
 Juv.

“Mr. Spectator,  
 15 I am turned of my great climacteric, and am naturally a man of a meek temper. About a dozen years ago I was married, for my sins, to a young woman of a good family and of an high spirit; but could not bring her to marry me, before I had entered into a treaty with her longer  
 20 than that of the grand alliance. Among other articles, it was therein stipulated that she should have 400*l.* a year

for pin-money, which I obliged myself to pay quarterly into the hands of one who acted as her plenipotentiary in that affair. I have ever since religiously observed my part in this solemn agreement. Now, sir, so it is, that the lady has had several children since I married her. The education of these my children straitens me so much that I have begged their mother to free me from the obligation of the above-mentioned pin-money, that it may go towards making a provision for her family. This proposal makes her noble blood swell in her veins, insomuch that finding me a little tardy in her last quarter's payment, she threatens me every day to arrest me; and proceeds so far as to tell me that if I do not do her justice, I shall die in a jail. To this she adds, when her passion will let her argue calmly, that she has several play-debts on her hand, which must be discharged very suddenly, and that she cannot lose her money as becomes a woman of her fashion, if she makes me any abatements in this article. I hope, sir, you will take an occasion from hence to give your opinion upon a subject which you have not yet touched, and inform us if there are any precedents for this usage among our ancestors; or whether you find any mention of pin-money in Grotius, Pufendorf, or any other of the civilians.

I am ever the humblest of your admirers,

Josiah Fribble, Esq." 25

As there is no man living who is a more professed advocate for the fair sex than myself, so there is none that would be more unwilling to invade any of their ancient rights and privileges; but as the doctrine of pin-money is of a very late date, unknown to our great grandmothers, and not yet received by many of our modern ladies, I think it is for the interest of both sexes to keep it from spreading.

Mr. Fribble may not, perhaps, be much mistaken where

he intimates that the supplying a man's wife with pin-money, is furnishing her with arms against himself. We may, indeed, generally observe, that in proportion as a woman is more or less beautiful, and her husband advanced in years, she stands in need of a greater or less number of pins, and upon a treaty of marriage, rises or falls in her demands accordingly. It must likewise be owned that high quality in a mistress does very much inflame this article in the marriage reckoning.

10 But where the age and circumstances of both parties are pretty much upon a level, I cannot but think the insisting upon pin-money is very extraordinary; and yet we find several matches broken off upon this very head. What would a foreigner, or one who is a stranger to this  
15 practice, think of a lover that forsakes his mistress because he is not willing to keep her in pins? But what would he think of the mistress, should he be informed that she asks five or six hundred pounds a year for this use? Should a man unacquainted with our customs be told the sums  
20 which are allowed in Great Britain under the title of pin-money, what a prodigious consumption of pins would he think there was in this island? "A pin a day," says our frugal proverb, "is a groat a year"; so that according to this calculation, my friend Fribble's wife must every  
25 year make use of eight millions six hundred and forty thousand new pins.

I am not ignorant that our British ladies allege they comprehend under this general term several other conveniences of life; I could therefore wish, for the honor  
30 of my country-women, that they had rather called it needle-money, which might have implied something of good-housewifery, and not have given the malicious world occasion to think that dress and trifle have always the uppermost place in a woman's thoughts.

I know several of my fair readers urge, in defence of this practice, that it is but a necessary provision they make for themselves, in case their husband proves a churl or a miser; so that they consider this allowance as a kind of alimony, which they may lay their claim to without actually separating from their husbands. But with submission, I think a woman who will give up herself to a man in marriage where there is the least room for such an apprehension, and trust her person to one whom she will not rely on for the common necessities of life may very properly be accused—in the phrase of an homely proverb—of being “penny wise and pound foolish.”

It is observed of over-cautious generals that they never engage in a battle without securing a retreat, in case the event should not answer their expectations; on the other hand, the greatest conquerors have burnt their ships, and broke down the bridges behind them, as being determined either to succeed or die in the engagement. In the same manner I should very much suspect a woman who takes such precautions for her retreat, and contrives methods how she may live happily, without the affection of one to whom she joins herself for life. Separate purses, between man and wife, are, in my opinion, as unnatural as separate beds. A marriage cannot be happy, where the pleasures, inclinations, and interests of both parties are not the same. There is no greater incitement to love in the mind of man, than the sense of a person's depending upon him for her ease and happiness; as a woman uses all her endeavors to please the person whom she looks upon as her honor, her comfort, and her support.

For this reason I am not very much surprised at the behavior of a rough country squire, who, being not a little shocked at the proceedings of a young widow that would

## 116 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

not recede from her demands of pin-money, was so enraged at her mercenary temper that he told her in great wrath, "As much as she thought him her slave, he would show all the world he did not care a pin for her."

5 Upon which he flew out of the room, and never saw her more.

Socrates, in Plato's *Alcibiades*, says he was informed by one who had traveled through Persia, that as he passed over a tract of lands, and inquired what the name of the  
10 place was, they told him it was the Queen's Girdle; to which he adds that another wide field which lay by it, was called the Queen's Veil, and that in the same manner there was a large portion of ground set aside for every part of her majesty's dress. These lands might  
15 not be improperly called the Queen of Persia's Pin-money.

I remember my friend Sir Roger, who I dare say never read this passage in Plato, told me some time since that upon his courting the perverse widow—of whom I  
20 have given an account in former papers—he had disposed of an hundred acres in a diamond-ring, which he would have presented her with, had she thought fit to accept it; and that upon her wedding-day she should have carried on her head fifty of the tallest oaks upon his estate. He fur-  
25 ther informed me that he would have given her a coal-pit to keep her in clean linen, that he would have allowed her the profits of a windmill for her fans, and have presented her, once in three years, with the shearing of his sheep for her under-petticoats. To which the knight  
30 always adds that though he did not care for fine clothes himself, there should not have been a woman in the country better dressed than my Lady Coverley. Sir Roger perhaps may in this, as well as in many other of his devices, appear something odd and singular, but if the

humor of pin-money prevails, I think it would be very proper for every gentleman of an estate to mark out so many acres of it under the title of "The Pins." L.

## XXVII. SIR ROGER IN WESTMINSTER ABBEY

[No. 329. Tuesday, March 18, 1712. ADDISON.]

Ire tamen restat Numa quo devenit et Ancus.

HOR.

My friend Sir Roger de Coverley told me t'other night that he had been reading my paper upon Westminster 5 Abbey, "in which," says he, "there are a great many ingenious fancies." He told me, at the same time, that he observed I had promised another paper upon the tombs, and that he should be glad to go and see them with me, not having visited them since he had read his- 10 tory. I could not at first imagine how this came into the knight's head, till I recollected that he had been very busy all last summer upon Baker's *Chronicle*, which he has quoted several times in his disputes with Sir Andrew Freeport since his last coming to town. Accordingly, 15 I promised to call upon him the next morning, that we might go together to the Abbey.

I found the knight under his butler's hands, who always shaves him. He was no sooner dressed than he called for a glass of the Widow Trueby's water, which 20 he told me he always drank before he went abroad. He recommended me to a dram of it at the same time with so much heartiness that I could not forbear drinking it. As soon as I had got it down, I found it very unpalatable;

## 118 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

upon which the knight, observing that I had made several wry faces, told me that he knew I should not like it at first, but that it was the best thing in the world against the stone or gravel. I could have wished, indeed, that  
5 he had acquainted me with the virtues of it sooner; but it was too late to complain, and I knew what he had done was out of good-will. Sir Roger told me, further, that he looked upon it to be very good for a man, whilst he stayed in town, to keep off infection; and that he got  
10 together a quantity of it upon the first news of the sickness being at Dantzic. When, of a sudden, turning short to one of his servants, who stood behind him, he bid him call a hackney-coach, and take care it was an elderly man that drove it.

15 He then resumed his discourse upon Mrs. Trueby's water, telling me that the Widow Trueby was one who did more good than all the doctors and apothecaries in the county; that she distilled every poppy that grew within five miles of her; that she distributed her water  
20 gratis among all sorts of people. To which the knight added that she had a very great jointure, and that the whole country would fain have it a match between him and her. "And truly," said Sir Roger, "if I had not been engaged, perhaps I could not have done  
25 better."

His discourse was broken off by his man's telling him he had called a coach. Upon our going to it, after having cast his eye upon the wheels, he asked the coachman if his axle-tree was good; upon the fellow's telling him  
30 he would warrant it, the knight turned to me, told me he looked like an honest man, and went in without further ceremony.

We had not gone far when Sir Roger, popping out his head, called the coachman down from his box, and upon

his presenting himself at the window, asked him if he smoked. As I was considering what this would end in, he bid him stop by the way at any good tobacconist's, and take in a roll of their best Virginia. Nothing material happened in the remaining part of our journey till we 5 were set down at the west end of the Abbey.

As we went up the body of the church, the knight pointed at the trophies upon one of the new monuments, and cried out, "A brave man, I warrant him!" Passing afterwards by Sir Cloudesley Shovel, he flung his hand 10 that way, and cried, "Sir Cloudesley Shovel! a very gallant man!" As we stood before Busby's tomb, the knight uttered himself again after the same manner: "Dr. Busby—a great man! he whipped my grandfather—a very great man! I should have gone to him myself if I had 15 not been a blockhead—a very great man!"

We were immediately conducted into the little chapel on the right hand. Sir Roger, planting himself at our historian's elbow, was very attentive to everything he said, particularly to the account he gave us of the lord 20 who had cut off the King of Morocco's head. Among several other figures, he was very well pleased to see the statesman Cecil upon his knees; and, concluding them all to be great men, was conducted to the figure which represents that martyr to good housewifery who died by 25 the prick of a needle. Upon our interpreter's telling us that she was a maid of honor to Queen Elizabeth, the knight was very inquisitive into her name and family; and after having regarded her finger for some time, "I wonder," says he, "that Sir Richard Baker has said nothing 30 of her in his *Chronicle*."

We were then conveyed to the two coronation chairs, where my old friend, after having heard that the stone underneath the most ancient of them, which was brought



from Scotland, was called Jacob's Pillar, sat himself down in the chair, and looking like the figure of an old Gothic king, asked our interpreter what authority they had to say that Jacob had ever been in Scotland. The fellow, instead of returning him an answer, told him that he hoped his honor would pay his forfeit. I could observe Sir Roger a little ruffled upon being thus trepanned; but, our guide not insisting upon his demand, the knight soon recovered his good humor, and whispered in my ear that if Will Wimble were with us, and saw those two chairs, it would go hard but he would get a tobacco-stopper out of one or t'other of them.

Sir Roger, in the next place, laid his hand upon Edward the Third's sword, and leaning upon the pommel of it, gave us the whole history of the Black Prince; concluding that, in Sir Richard Baker's opinion, Edward the Third was one of the greatest princes that ever sat upon the English throne.

We were then shown Edward the Confessor's tomb, upon which Sir Roger acquainted us that he was the first who touched for the evil; and afterwards Henry the Fourth's, upon which he shook his head and told us there was fine reading in the casualties of that reign.

Our conductor then pointed to that monument where there is a figure of one of our English kings without an head; and upon giving us to know that the head, which was of beaten silver, had been stolen away several years since—"Some Whig, I'll warrant you," says Sir Roger; "you ought to lock up your kings better; they will carry off the body too, if you don't take care."

The glorious names of Henry the Fifth and Queen Elizabeth gave the knight great opportunities of shining and of doing justice to Sir Richard Baker, who, as our knight observed with some surprise, had a great many

kings in him whose monuments he had not seen in the Abbey.

For my own part, I could not but be pleased to see the knight show such an honest passion for the glory of his country, and such a respectful gratitude to the memory of 5 its princes.

I must not omit that the benevolence of my good old friend, which flows out towards every one he converses with, made him very kind to our interpreter, whom he looked upon as an extraordinary man; for which reason 10 he shook him by the hand at parting, telling him that he should be very glad to see him at his lodgings in Norfolk Buildings, and talk over these matters with him more at leisure.

L.

## XXVIII. SIR ROGER UPON BEARDS

[No. 331. Thursday, March 20, 1712. BUDGELL.]

—Stolidam præbet tibi vellere barbam.

PERS.

WHEN I was last with my friend Sir Roger in West- 15 minster Abbey, I observed that he stood longer than ordinary before the bust of a venerable old man. I was at a loss to guess the reason of it; when, after some time, he pointed to the figure, and asked me if I did not think that our forefathers looked much wiser in their beards than we 20 do without them? "For my part," says he, "when I am walking in my gallery in the country, and see my ancestors, who many of them died before they were of my age, I cannot forbear regarding them as so many old patriarchs, and, at the same time, looking upon myself as an idle 25 smock-faced young fellow. I love to see your Abrahams, your Isaacs, and your Jacobs, as we have them in old pieces

of tapestry, with beards below their girdles, that cover half the hangings." The knight added, if I would recommend beards in one of my papers, and endeavor to restore human faces to their ancient dignity, that, upon a month's  
5 warning, he would undertake to lead up the fashion himself in a pair of whiskers.

I smiled at my friend's fancy; but after we parted, could not forbear reflecting on the metamorphosis our faces have undergone in this particular.

- 10 The beard, conformable to the notion of my friend Sir Roger, was for many ages looked upon as the type of wisdom. Lucian more than once rallies the philosophers of his time, who endeavored to rival one another in beards; and represents a learned man who stood for a  
15 professorship in philosophy, as unqualified for it by the shortness of his beard.

Ælian, in his account of Zoilus, the pretended critic who wrote against Homer and Plato, and thought himself wiser than all who had gone before him, tells us that  
20 this Zoilus had a very long beard that hung down upon his breast, but no hair upon his head, which he always kept close shaved, regarding, it seems, the hairs of his head as so many suckers, which, if they had been suffered to grow, might have drawn away the nourishment from his  
25 chin, and by that means have starved his beard.

I have read somewhere that one of the popes refused to accept an edition of a saint's works, which were presented to him, because the saint, in his effigies before the book, was drawn without a beard.

- 30 We see by these instances what homage the world has formerly paid to beards; and that a barber was not then allowed to make those depredations on the faces of the learned, which have been permitted him of late years.

Accordingly several wise nations have been so extremely

jealous of the least ruffle offered to their beards, that they seem to have fixed the point of honor principally in that part. The Spaniards were wonderfully tender in this particular. Don Quevedo, in his third vision of the last judgment, has carried the humor very far when he tells 5 us that one of his vainglorious countrymen, after having received sentence, was taken into custody by a couple of evil spirits; but that his guides happening to disorder his mustachios, they were forced to recompose them with a pair of curling-irons before they could get him to file off. 10

If we look into the history of our own nation, we shall find that the beard flourished in the Saxon heptarchy, but was very much discouraged under the Norman line. It shot out, however, from time to time, in several reigns under different shapes. The last effort it made seems to 15 have been in Queen Mary's days, as the curious reader may find, if he pleases to peruse the figures of Cardinal Pole and Bishop Gardiner; though, at the same time, I think it may be questioned if zeal against popery has not induced our Protestant painters to extend the beards 20 of these two persecutors beyond their natural dimensions, in order to make them appear the more terrible.

I find but few beards worth taking notice of in the reign of King James the First.

During the civil wars there appeared one, which makes 25 too great a figure in story to be passed over in silence: I mean that of the redoubted Hudibras, an account of which Butler has transmitted to posterity in the following lines:—

"His tawny beard was th' equal grace	30
Both of his wisdom and his face;	
In cut and dye so like a tile	
A sudden view it would beguile;	
The upper part thereof was whey,	
The nether orange mixed with grey."	35

## 124 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

The whisker continued for some time among us after the expiration of beards; but this is a subject which I shall not here enter upon, having discussed it at large in a distinct treatise, which I keep by me in manuscript, 5 upon the mustachio.

If my friend Sir Roger's project of introducing beards should take effect, I fear the luxury of the present age would make it a very expensive fashion. There is no question but the beaux would soon provide themselves 10 with false ones of the lightest colors, and the most immoderate lengths. A fair beard of the tapestry size, which Sir Roger seems to approve, could not come under twenty guineas. The famous golden beard of Æsculapius would hardly be more valuable than one made in 15 the extravagance of the fashion.

Besides, we are not certain that the ladies would not come into the mode, when they take the air on horseback. They already appear in hats and feathers, coats, and periwigs; and I see no reason why we may not suppose that 20 they would have their riding-beards on the same occasion.

N.B. I may give the moral of this discourse in another paper. X.

### XXIX. SIR ROGER AT THE PLAY

[No. 335. Tuesday, March 25, 1712. ADDISON.]

Respicere exemplar vitae morumque jubebo  
Doctum imitatore, et vivas hinc ducere voces.

HOR.

My friend Sir Roger de Coverley, when we last met together at the club, told me that he had a great mind to 25 see the new tragedy with me, assuring me at the same time that he had not been at a play these twenty years.

"The last I saw," said Sir Roger, "was the *Committee*, which I should not have gone to, neither, had not I been told beforehand that it was a good Church of England comedy." He then proceeded to inquire of me who this distressed mother was; and upon hearing that she was 5 Hector's widow, he told me that her husband was a brave man, and that when he was a school-boy he had read his life at the end of the dictionary. My friend asked me, in the next place, if there would not be some danger in coming home late, in case the Mohocks should be abroad. 10 "I assure you," says he, "I thought I had fallen into their hands last night, for I observed two or three lusty black men that followed me half way up Fleet Street, and mended their pace behind me in proportion as I put on to get away from them. You must know," continued the 15 knight, with a smile, "I fancied they had a mind to hunt me, for I remember an honest gentleman in my neighborhood who was served such a trick in King Charles the Second's time; for which reason he has not ventured himself in town ever since. I might have shown them very 20 good sport had this been their design; for, as I am an old fox-hunter, I should have turned and dodged, and have played them a thousand tricks they had never seen in their lives before." Sir Roger added that if these gentlemen had any such intention they did not succeed very 25 well in it; "for I threw them out," says he, "at the end of Norfolk Street, where I doubled the corner and got shelter in my lodgings before they could imagine what was become of me. However," says the knight, "if Captain Sentry will make one with us to-morrow night, and 30 if you will both of you call upon me about four o'clock, that we may be at the house before it is full, I will have my own coach in readiness to attend you, for John tells me he has got the forewheels mended."

## 126 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

The captain, who did not fail to meet me there at the appointed hour, bid Sir Roger fear nothing, for that he had put on the same sword which he made use of at the battle of Steenkirk. Sir Roger's servants, and among  
5 the rest my old friend the butler, had, I found, provided themselves with good oaken plants to attend their master upon this occasion. When he had placed him in his coach, with myself at his left hand, the captain before him, and his butler at the head of his footmen in the  
10 rear, we convoyed him in safety to the playhouse, where, after having marched up the entry in good order, the captain and I went in with him, and seated him betwixt us in the pit. As soon as the house was full and the candles lighted, my old friend stood up and looked about  
15 him with that pleasure which a mind seasoned with humanity naturally feels in itself at the sight of a multitude of people who seem pleased with one another, and partake of the same common entertainment. I could not but fancy to myself, as the old man stood up in the mid-  
20 dle of the pit, that he made a very proper center to a tragic audience. Upon the entering of Pyrrhus, the knight told he that he did not believe the King of France himself had a better strut. I was, indeed, very attentive to my old friend's remarks, because I looked  
25 upon them as a piece of natural criticism; and was well pleased to hear him, at the conclusion of almost every scene, telling me that he could not imagine how the play would end. One while he appeared much concerned for Andromache, and a little while after as much for Her-  
30 mione; and was extremely puzzled to think what would become of Pyrrhus.

When Sir Roger saw Andromache's obstinate refusal to her lover's importunities, he whispered me in the ear that he was sure she would never have him; to which he

added, with a more than ordinary vehemence, "You can't imagine, sir, what 'tis to have to do with a widow!" Upon Pyrrhus his threatening afterwards to leave her, the knight shook his head, and muttered to himself, "Ay, do if you can." This part dwelt so much upon 5 my friend's imagination that at the close of the third act, as I was thinking of something else, he whispered in my ear, "These widows, sir, are the most perverse creatures in the world. But pray," says he, "you that are a critic, is the play according to your dramatic rules, 10 as you call them? Should your people in tragedy always talk to be understood? Why, there is not a single sentence in this play that I do not know the meaning of."

The fourth act very luckily began before I had time to give the old gentleman an answer. "Well," says the 15 knight, sitting down with great satisfaction, "I suppose we are now to see Hector's ghost." He then renewed his attention, and, from time to time, fell a praising the widow. He made, indeed, a little mistake as to one of her pages, whom at his first entering he took for Astya- 20 nax; but he quickly set himself right in that particular, though at the same time he owned he should have been very glad to have seen the little boy, "who," says he, "must needs be a very fine child by the account that is given of him." 25

Upon Hermione's going off with a menace to Pyrrhus, the audience gave a loud clap, to which Sir Roger added, "On my word, a notable young baggage!"

As there was a very remarkable silence and stillness in the audience during the whole action, it was natural for 30 them to take the opportunity of these intervals between the acts to express their opinion of the players and of their respective parts. Sir Roger, hearing a cluster of them praise Orestes, struck in with them, and told them



## 128 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

that he thought his friend Pylades was a very sensible man; as they were afterwards applauding Pyrrhus, Sir Roger put in a second time: "And let me tell you," says he, "though he speaks but little, I like the old fellow  
5 in whiskers as well as any of them." Captain Sentry, seeing two or three wags who sat near us lean with an attentive ear towards Sir Roger, and fearing lest they should smoke the knight, plucked him by the elbow, and whispered something in his ear that lasted till the  
10 opening of the fifth act. The knight was wonderfully attentive to the account which Orestes gives of Pyrrhus his death, and, at the conclusion of it, told me it was such a bloody piece of work that he was glad it was not done upon the stage. Seeing afterwards Orestes in his raving  
15 fit, he grew more than ordinary serious, and took occasion to moralize, in his way, upon an evil conscience, adding that Orestes in his madness looked as if he saw something.

As we were the first that came into the house, so we  
20 were the last that went out of it; being resolved to have a clear passage for our old friend, whom we did not care to venture among the justling of the crowd. Sir Roger went out fully satisfied with his entertainment, and we guarded him to his lodgings in the same manner that we  
25 brought him to the playhouse, being highly pleased, for my own part, not only with the performance of the excellent piece which had been presented, but with the satisfaction which it had given to the good old man.

L

### XXX. WILL HONEYCOMB AND THE LADIES

[No. 359. Tuesday, April 22, 1712. BUDGELL.]

*Torva leaena lupum sequitur, lupus ipse capellam;  
Florentem cytismum sequitur lasciva capella.*

VIRG.

As we were at the club last night, I observed that my friend Sir Roger, contrary to his usual custom, sat very silent, and instead of minding what was said by the company, was whistling to himself in a very thoughtful mood, and playing with a cork. I jogged Sir Andrew Freeport 5 who sat between us; and as we were both observing him, we saw the knight shake his head and heard him say to himself, "A foolish woman! I can't believe it." Sir Andrew gave him a gentle pat upon the shoulder, and offered to lay him a bottle of wine that he was thinking 10 of the widow. My old friend started, and, recovering out of his brown study, told Sir Andrew that once in his life he had been in the right. In short, after some little hesitation, Sir Roger told us, in the fullness of his heart, that he had just received a letter from his steward, which 15 acquainted him that his old rival and antagonist in the county, Sir David Dundrum, had been making a visit to the widow. "However," says Sir Roger, "I can never think that she'll have a man that's half a year older than I am, and a noted republican into the bargain." 20

Will Honeycomb, who looks upon love as his particular province, interrupting our friend with a jaunty laugh, "I thought, knight," says he, "thou hadst lived long enough in the world not to pin thy happiness upon one that is a woman and a widow. I think that without vanity I may 25

pretend to know as much of the female world as any man in Great Britain, though the chief of my knowledge consists in this—that they are not to be known.” Will immediately, with his usual fluency, rambled into an  
 5 account of his own amours. “I am now,” says he, “upon the verge of fifty”—though, by the way, we all knew he was turned of threescore. “You may easily guess,” continued Will, “that I have not lived so long in the world without having had some thoughts of settling  
 10 in it, as the phrase is. To tell you truly, I have several times tried my fortune that way, though I can’t much boast of my success.

“I made my first addresses to a young lady in the country; but when I thought things were pretty well  
 15 drawing to a conclusion, her father happening to hear that I had formerly boarded with a surgeon, the old put forbid me his house, and within a fortnight after married his daughter to a fox-hunter in the neighborhood.

“I made my next applications to a widow, and attacked  
 20 her so briskly that I thought myself within a fortnight of her. As I waited upon her one morning, she told me that she intended to keep her ready money and jointure in her own hand, and desired me to call upon her attorney in Lyon’s Inn, who would adjust with me what it  
 25 was proper for me to add to it. I was so rebuffed by this overture that I never inquired either for her or her attorney afterwards.

“A few months after, I addressed myself to a young lady who was an only daughter and of a good family; I  
 30 danced with her at several balls, squeezed her by the hand, said soft things, and, in short, made no doubt of her heart; and, though my fortune was not equal to hers, I was in hopes that her fond father would not deny her the man she had fixed her affections upon. But,

as I went one day to the house in order to break the matter to him, I found the whole family in confusion, and heard, to my unspeakable surprise, that Miss Jenny was that very morning run away with the butler.

"I then courted a second widow, and am at a loss to 5  
this day how I came to miss her, for she had often commended my person and behavior. Her maid, indeed, told me one day that her mistress had said she never saw a gentleman with such a spindle pair of legs as Mr. Honeycomb. 10

"After this I laid siege to four heiresses successively, and being a handsome young dog in those days, quickly made a breach in their hearts; but I don't know how it came to pass, though I seldom failed of getting the daughter's consent, I could never in my life get the old people 15  
on my side.

"I could give you an account of a thousand other unsuccessful attempts, particularly of one which I made some years since upon an old woman, whom I had certainly borne away with flying colors if her relations had 20  
not come pouring in to her assistance from all parts of England; nay, I believe I should have got her at last, had not she been carried off by an hard frost."

As Will's transitions are extremely quick, he turned from Sir Roger, and applying himself to me, told me 25  
there was a passage in the book I had considered last Saturday which deserved to be writ in letters of gold; and taking out a pocket Milton, read the following lines, which are part of one of Adam's speeches to Eve after the fall: 30

"Oh! why did our  
Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven  
With Spirits masculine, create at last  
This novelty on Earth, this fair defect  
Of Nature, and not fill the World at once

35

## 132 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

With men as Angels, without feminine;  
 Or find some other way to generate  
 Mankind? This mischief had not then befallen,  
 And more that shall befall—innumerable  
 5 Disturbances on Earth through female snares,  
 And straight conjunction with this sex. For either  
 He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;  
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain,  
 10 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gained  
 By a far worse, or, if she love, withheld  
 By parents; or his happiest choice too late  
 Shall meet, already linked and wedlock-bound  
 To a fell adversary, his hate or shame;  
 15 Which infinite calamity shall cause  
 To human life, and household peace confound."

Sir Roger listened to this passage with great attention,  
 and desiring Mr. Honeycomb to fold down a leaf at the  
 place and lend him his book, the knight put it up in his  
 20 pocket, and told us that he would read over those verses  
 again before he went to bed. X.

## XXXI. SIR ROGER AT VAUXHALL

[No. 383. Tuesday, May 20, 1712. ADDISON.]

Criminibus debent hortos.

Juv.

As I was sitting in my chamber and thinking on a sub-  
 ject for my next *Spectator*, I heard two or three irregular  
 bounces at my landlady's door, and upon the opening of  
 25 it, a loud, cheerful voice inquiring whether the philoso-  
 pher was at home. The child who went to the door  
 answered very innocently that he did not lodge there. I  
 immediately recollected that it was my good friend Sir

Roger's voice, and that I had promised to go with him on the water to Spring Garden, in case it proved a good evening. The knight put me in mind of my promise from the bottom of the staircase, but told me that if I was speculating, he would stay below till I had done. 5 Upon my coming down, I found all the children of the family got about my old friend, and my landlady herself, who is a notable prating gossip, engaged in a conference with him, being mightily pleased with his stroking her little boy upon the head, and bidding him be a good 10 child and mind his book.

We were no sooner come to the Temple Stairs but we were surrounded with a crowd of watermen, offering us their respective services. Sir Roger, after having looked about him very attentively, spied one with a wooden leg, 15 and immediately gave him orders to get his boat ready. As we were walking towards it, "You must know," says Sir Roger, "I never make use of anybody to row me that has not either lost a leg or an arm. I would rather bate him a few strokes of his oar than not employ an honest 20 man that had been wounded in the Queen's service. If I was a lord or a bishop, and kept a barge, I would not put a fellow in my livery that had not a wooden leg."

My old friend, after having seated himself and trimmed 25 the boat with his coachman—who, being a very sober man, always serves for ballast on these occasions—, we made the best of our way for Fox-hall. Sir Roger obliged the waterman to give us the history of his right leg, and hearing that he had left it at La Hogue, with 30 many particulars which passed in that glorious action, the knight, in the triumph of his heart, made several reflections on the greatness of the British nation; as, that one Englishman could beat three Frenchmen; that we could

## 134 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

never be in danger of popery so long as we took care of our fleet; that the Thames was the noblest river in Europe; that London Bridge was a greater piece of work than any of the seven wonders of the world; with many other honest prejudices which naturally cleave to the heart of a true Englishman.

After some short pause, the old knight, turning about his head twice or thrice to take a survey of this great metropolis, bid me observe how thick the city was set  
10 with churches, and that there was scarce a single steeple on this side Temple Bar. "A most heathenish sight!" says Sir Roger; "there is no religion at this end of the town. The fifty new churches will very much mend the prospect; but church work is slow, church work is  
15 slow!"

I do not remember I have anywhere mentioned, in Sir Roger's character, his custom of saluting everybody that passes by him with a good-morrow or a good-night. This the old man does out of the overflowings of his  
20 humanity, though at the same time it renders him so popular among all his country neighbors that it is thought to have gone a good way in making him once or twice knight of the shire.

He cannot forbear this exercise of benevolence even in  
25 town, when he meets with any one in his morning or evening walk. It broke from him to several boats that passed by us upon the water; but to the knight's great surprise, as he gave the good-night to two or three young fellows a little before our landing, one of them, instead  
30 of returning the civility, asked us what queer old put we had in the boat, with a great deal of the like Thames ribaldry. Sir Roger seemed a little shocked at first, but at length, assuming a face of magistracy, told us that if he were a Middlesex justice he would make such vagrants

know that her Majesty's subjects were no more to be abused by water than by land.

We were now arrived at Spring Garden, which is exquisitely pleasant at this time of year. When I considered the fragrancy of the walks and bowers, with the 5  
choirs of birds that sung upon the trees, and the loose tribe of people that walked under their shades, I could not but look upon the place as a kind of Mahometan paradise. Sir Roger told me it put him in mind of a little coppice by his house in the country, which his chaplain used to 10  
call an aviary of nightingales. "You must understand," says the knight, "there is nothing in the world that pleases a man in love so much as your nightingale. Ah, Mr. Spectator! the many moonlight nights that I have walked by myself and thought on the widow by the music of the 15  
nightingales!" He here fetched a deep sigh, and was falling into a fit of musing, when a mask, who came behind him, gave him a gentle tap upon the shoulder, and asked him if he would drink a bottle of mead with her. But the knight, being startled at so unexpected a 20  
familiarity, and displeased to be interrupted in his thoughts of the widow, told her she was a wanton baggage, and bid her go about her business.

We concluded our walk with a glass of Burton ale and a slice of hung beef. When we had done eating, our- 25  
selves, the knight called a waiter to him and bid him carry the remainder to the waterman that had but one leg. I perceived the fellow stared upon him at the oddness of the message, and was going to be saucy; upon which I ratified the knight's commands with a peremp- 30  
tory look.

As we were going out of the garden, my old friend, thinking himself obliged as a member of the quorum to animadvert upon the morals of the place, told the mis-



## 136 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

tress of the house, who sat at the bar, that he should be a better customer to her garden if there were more nightingales and fewer strumpets. I.

### XXXII. DEATH OF SIR ROGER

[No. 517. Thursday, October 23, 1712. ADDISON.]

*Heu pietas! heu prisca fides!*

VIRG.

WE last night received a piece of ill news at our club  
5 which very sensibly afflicted every one of us. I question  
not but my readers themselves will be troubled at the  
hearing of it. To keep them no longer in suspense—Sir  
Roger de Coverley is dead. He departed this life at his  
house in the country, after a few weeks' sickness. Sir  
10 Andrew Freeport has a letter from one of his correspond-  
ents in those parts, that informs him the old man caught  
a cold at the county sessions, as he was very warmly  
promoting an address of his own penning, in which he  
succeeded according to his wishes. But this particular  
15 comes from a Whig justice of peace, who was always Sir  
Roger's enemy and antagonist. I have letters both from  
the chaplain and Captain Sentry which mention nothing  
of it, but are filled with many particulars to the honor of  
the good old man. I have likewise a letter from the  
20 butler, who took so much care of me last summer when  
I was at the knight's house. As my friend the butler  
mentions, in the simplicity of his heart, several circum-  
stances the others have passed over in silence, I shall  
give my reader a copy of his letter without any altera-  
25 tion or diminution.

"Honored Sir,

Knowing that you was my old master's good friend, I  
could not forbear sending you the melancholy news of his

death, which has afflicted the whole country, as well as his poor servants, who loved him, I may say, better than we did our lives. I am afraid he caught his death the last county sessions, where he would go to see justice done to a poor widow woman and her fatherless children, that had been 5 wronged by a neighboring gentleman; for you know, sir, my good master was always the poor man's friend. Upon his coming home, the first complaint he made was that he had lost his roast beef stomach, not being able to touch a sirloin, which was served up according to custom; and you know he 10 used to take great delight in it. From that time forward he grew worse and worse, but still kept a good heart to the last. Indeed, we were once in great hope of his recovery, upon a kind message that was sent him from the widow lady whom he had made love to the forty last years of his life; but this 15 only proved a light'ning before death. He has bequeathed to this lady, as a token of his love, a great pearl necklace, and a couple of silver bracelets set with jewels, which belonged to my good old lady his mother. He has bequeathed the fine white gelding, that he used to ride a hunting upon, to his 20 chaplain, because he thought he would be kind to him, and has left you all his books. He has, moreover, bequeathed to the chaplain a very pretty tenement with good lands about it. It being a very cold day when he made his will, he left for mourning to every man in the parish a great frieze coat, 25 and to every woman a black riding-hood. It was a most moving sight to see him take leave of his poor servants, commending us all for our fidelity, whilst we were not able to speak a word for weeping. As we most of us are grown gray-headed in our dear master's service, he has left us 30 pensions and legacies, which we may live very comfortably upon the remaining part of our days. He has bequeathed a great deal more in charity, which is not yet come to my knowledge, and it is peremptorily said in the parish that he has left money to build a steeple to the church; for he was 35 heard to say some time ago that if he lived two years longer, Coverley Church should have a steeple to it. The chaplain tells everybody that he made a very good end, and never speaks of him without tears. He was buried according to his own directions among the family of the Coverleys, on the 40 left hand of his father, Sir Arthur. The coffin was carried by six of his tenants, and the pall held up by six of

## 138 The Sir Roger de Coverley Papers

the quorum. The whole parish followed the corpse with heavy hearts, and in their mourning suits, the men in frieze, and the women in riding-hoods. Captain Sentry, my master's nephew, has taken possession of the hall house and the whole estate.

5 When my old master saw him a little before his death, he shook him by the hand, and wished him joy of the estate which was falling to him, desiring him only to make good use of it, and to pay the several legacies, and the gifts of charity which he told him he had left as quit-rents upon the estate. The

10 captain truly seems a courteous man, though he says but little. He makes much of those whom my master loved, and shows great kindness to the old house dog, that you know my poor master was so fond of. It would have gone to your heart to have heard the moans the dumb creature made on the day of

15 my master's death. He has ne'er joyed himself since; no more has any of us. 'Twas the melancholiest day for the poor people that ever happend in Worcestershire. This being all from,

Honored sir, your most sorrowful servant,

20 Edward Biscuit."

"P. S. My master desired, some weeks before he died, that a book which comes up to you by the carrier should be given to Sir Andrew Freeport in his name."

This letter, notwithstanding the poor butler's manner

25 of writing it, gave us such an idea of our good old friend, that upon the reading of it there was not a dry eye in the club. Sir Andrew, opening the book, found it to be a collection of Acts of Parliament. There was in particular the Act of Uniformity, with some passages in it

30 marked by Sir Roger's own hand. Sir Andrew found that they related to two or three points which he had disputed with Sir Roger the last time he appeared at the club. Sir Andrew, who would have been merry at such an incident on another occasion, at the sight of the old

35 man's handwriting burst into tears, and put the book into his pocket. Captain Sentry informs me that the knight has left rings and mourning for every one in the club.

O.

## NOTES AND COMMENT



## NOTES AND COMMENT

[Heavy numerals refer to page; light ones to line]

### I. MR. SPECTATOR

IN this first *Sir Roger de Coverley* paper, Addison introduces Mr. Spectator to the reader. In his representation of that gentleman, Addison frequently appears to be drawing a portrait of himself. Mr. Spectator's bashfulness, his love of reading and of foreign travel, his distaste for party controversy, and his character as a disinterested observer of mankind are all traits that belong equally to Addison. It is not possible, however, to press these resemblances to a point of complete identification between the two. It is only in inward traits of temperament that they resemble one another; in outward circumstances of life they differ. Thus Addison was not, like Mr. Spectator, "born to a small hereditary estate" (3, 13); his father had never been "justice of the peace" (4, 2-3); nor had he ever visited Egypt (5, 1-2). Moreover it is a significant fact that Mr. Spectator never "gratifies the curiosity" of the reader with regard to his complexion, disposition, or state as a married or single man (3, 3-4), and never divulges his "name," "age," and "lodgings" (6, 30). By thus allowing Mr. Spectator only a partial likeness to himself, Addison has succeeded admirably in imparting to that gentleman the mystery proper to an imaginary person.

(Motto). "One with a flash begins and ends in smoke;  
Another out of smoke brings glorious light,  
And (without raising expectation high)  
Surprises us with dazzling miracles."—

HORACE, *Ars Poetica*, verses 143-144.

3, 3. Black: of dark complexion.

3, 9. The several persons are, of course, the several members of Mr. Spectator's Club; viz., Mr. Spectator himself, described in the present paper, and the remaining members of the club, described in the next paper.

4, 2. Depending: pending.

4, 14. Nonage = "non" (Latin) + "age."

4, 22. Whole life: a humorous exaggeration of Addison's own characteristic reticence.

5, 2-3. Pyramid. Addison never traveled beyond Italy. He is here probably referring to a book by the mathematician John Greaves (1602-1652), entitled *Pyramidographia or a Discourse of the Pyramids of Egypt* (1646). In it the author published certain measurements of the Great Pyramid at Gizeh which were called in question by subsequent scientists. It is apparently in playful allusion to this difference of opinion that Addison represents Mr. Spectator as undertaking a special trip to Egypt to satisfy his curiosity on the merits of the controversy.

5, 9. Place of general resort. The reference is to the coffee-houses, which played a very important part in the social life of eighteenth-century London. The coffee-house was a very democratic institution, being frequented by all classes of society from nobles to highwaymen. There for the price of one penny one might get a cup of coffee and sit as long as one chose before an open fire. The coffee-house, like the European café of to-day, was used as a place to meet congenial acquaintances, to exchange the gossip of the hour, to read the news, and to write and receive letters. In coffee-houses of the better class good order was rigidly enforced, no drink stronger than coffee being served, gambling being forbidden, and swearing and quarreling being punished by fines. Each coffee-house was frequented by a more or less distinct class of patrons and accordingly came to possess a more or less distinctive character of its own. Thus, of the six coffee-houses mentioned in the text, Will's was the resort of men of letters, Child's of the clergy, the Grecian of lawyers, St. James's of Whig politicians, the Cocoa Tree a chocolate house, of Tory politicians, and Jonathan's of stock-jobbers.

5, 15. The Postman: a London newspaper issued three times a week by a French Protestant named Fonvive.

5, 21. Drury Lane and the Haymarket: the two principal theaters of London in Queen Anne's day.

5, 26. But in my own club. Addison was likewise in the habit of restricting his conversation to a small circle of intimate acquaintances, whom he met in a coffee-house called Button's.

6, 1. Blots: men, in backgammon, left uncovered and so liable to capture.

6, 3-4. **Neutrality between the Whigs and Tories.** Addison was extremely anxious to keep the *Spectator* out of politics. In *Spectator* No. 16 he writes: "As I am very sensible my paper would lose its whole effect, should it run out into the outrages of a party, I shall take care to keep clear of everything which looks that way."

6, 17. **Print myself out:** to put my ideas in print, not to print myself out of ideas.

6, 21. **A sheetful of thoughts every morning:** a literal description of the *Spectator*, which consisted of a single sheet and appeared every morning except Sunday.

6, 27-28. **Points . . . spoken to.** We still say "speak to the point."

7, 9. **Discoveries: disclosures.**

7, 14-15. **Concerted . . . in a club.** Addison here probably has in mind the fact of his own association with Steele, Budgell, and others in the conduct of the *Spectator*.

7, 17. **Correspond with me.** A considerable number of the letters published throughout the *Spectator* are from real persons. In *Spectator* No. 542 Addison acknowledges his indebtedness to these correspondents.

7, 18. **Mr. Buckley's.** Mr. Samuel Buckley, editor of the first London "daily," entitled the *Daily Courant*, published the *Spectator*. The first 448 numbers he published alone; the remaining numbers he published in connection with Jacob Tonson.

7, 19. **Little Britain:** a section in the center of London, so called because formerly the residence of the Dukes of Brittany. Prior to the eighteenth century, Little Britain had been a favorite resort of book-sellers. See the chapter entitled "Little Britain" in Irving's *Sketch Book*, edited for this series by A. E. Leonard, pages 225-242.

7, 23. **C.** Each of the chief contributors to the *Spectator* signed his papers with some particular letter. Addison employed for this purpose one of the letters of the word Clio (the Muse of History); Steele, an R. or a T.; and Budgell, an X. In *Spectator* No. 221 Addison gives a delightfully whimsical account of these "single capital letters" placed at the end of each paper.



## QUESTIONS

1. In what respects does Mr. Spectator resemble Addison and in what respects does he differ from him?
2. What personal traits of Mr. Spectator does Addison refuse to divulge and why?
3. Why should not Addison make Mr. Spectator like himself in all respects or else in none?
4. Should you judge that a contemporary reader would have been able to recognize Addison's likeness in this portrait of Mr. Spectator?

## II. THE CLUB

In this second paper, Steele supplies sketches of Mr. Spectator's club associates. Each of these men represents a distinct class of society. Sir Roger de Coverley, the first and foremost of the group, represents the landed aristocracy; the Templar, the law; Sir Andrew Freeport, trade; Captain Sentry, the army; Will Honeycomb, polite society; and a certain nameless gentleman, the church. As the representative of a particular class, each of these members of Mr. Spectator's club shares with other members of his class certain common characteristics which mark him as a member of that class. But in addition to these class characteristics, each of Mr. Spectator's club associates possesses certain personal traits that distinguish him as an individual from other members of his class. Thus, Sir Roger de Coverley is, according to class, a country squire but, as an individual, he is represented as a disappointed lover (8, 13), who has acquired in consequence certain amiable eccentricities that set him apart from other country squires; the Templar is a lawyer only by parental compulsion; personally he is more interested in "the passions themselves" than in "the debates which arise from them" (9, 18-20); Sir Andrew is distinguished from other members of the merchant class by being a "trader" not only of merchandise but also of "good sense" (10, 22); Captain Sentry differs from his fellow soldiers by the possession of an "invincible modesty" (10, 34); Will Honeycomb is by profession a devotee of society but is endowed by nature with a certain frank ingenuousness that lifts him above the ordinary man of fashion; and, finally, the clergyman, though by profession a servant

of the church, is by nature a man distinguished above the ordinary clergy of Addison's day by "general learning, great sanctity of life, and the most exact good breeding" (13, 11-12). By thus adding to his characters these individualizing traits, Steele has invested these men with a lifelikeness which has led certain critics to believe that he used as his models actual men of the day. But since the resemblances which these critics have been able to point out between Mr. Spectator's club associates and persons then living—like that between Mr. Spectator and Addison—are but partial, and since, moreover, both Steele and Addison emphatically disclaim any intention of dealing with actual personalities, it is safe to conclude that, with the exception of an occasional hint from real life, these portraits—like all true art—are essentially imaginary.

(Motto).

"Six more, at least, join their consenting voice."—

JUVENAL, *Satire VII*, verses 166-167.

7, 25-26. **Sir Roger de Coverley:** A name borrowed by Steele, at the suggestion of Swift, from a popular dance tune of the day called *Sir Roger a Calverley*. The dance tune was not, therefore, named after the ancestor of Sir Roger, but Sir Roger's ancestor was named after the dance tune.

8, 1. **Country-dance:** a dance in which men and women face one another in two opposite rows, as in our Virginia reel.

8, 7. **Humor:** peculiarity.

8, 11. **Soho Square:** a fashionable quarter of London in Queen Anne's day. In two later papers (121, 12-13, and 125, 27-28) Addison places Sir Roger's lodgings in Norfolk St.; and in *Spectator* No. 410 Tickell places them in Bond St., Covent Garden. These inconsistencies are due, of course, to a lack of careful collaboration on the part of the various contributors to the *Spectator*.

8, 16. **Lord Rochester and Sir George Etherege.** John Wilmot, Earl of Rochester (1647-1680), and Sir George Etherege (1635-1691) were brilliant but dissolute wits of the reign of Charles II.

8, 17-18. **Bully Dawson:** a "swaggering sharper" of the same period.

8, 34. **Upstairs to a visit:** as he goes upstairs to pay a visit.

9, 1. **Justice of the quorum:** justice of the peace.

9, 2. **Quarter session:** a criminal court held in each county once a quarter by justices of the peace. See note to 75, 7.

9, 4. **Game Act:** an Act very difficult to explain because couched in very obscure language.

9, 6-7. **The Inner Temple:** one of four legal societies known as the Inns of Court, which still exist in the London of to-day. The Inns of Court are so called because they originally provided board and lodgings for their pupils. The other three are the Middle Temple, Gray's Inn, and Lincoln's Inn. The Inner and the Middle Temple are so named because they occupy land which formerly belonged to the Knights Templars, a military order dissolved in the fourteenth century.

9, 12-13. **Aristotle and Longinus.** The Greek philosopher Aristotle (B. C. 384-322) wrote two treatises on literary criticism—the *Rhetoric* and the *Poetics*; the Greek literary critic Longinus (213-273) is the reputed author of a famous treatise *On the Sublime*.

9, 13-14. **Littleton or Coke.** Sir Edward Coke (1552-1634) wrote an enlargement of a famous treatise on English real estate by Sir Thomas Littleton (1407-1481). This enlargement is commonly known as *Coke upon Littleton*.

9, 21. **Demosthenes and Tully.** Demosthenes (B. C. 384-322) and Marcus Tullius Cicero (B. C. 106-43) were the two chief orators of Greece and Rome respectively. Formerly "Tully" was a common abbreviation of Marcus Tullius Cicero.

9, 33. **At five.** In Steele's day the play began between five and six. The Templar starts from his lodgings in the Inner Temple, passes through the gardens of New Inn, crosses the Strand, passes through the open square known as Russell's Court, pauses at Will's Coffee-house for refreshment, has his shoes rubbed and his periwig powdered at the barber's as you go into the Rose Tavern, and then enters Drury Lane Theater, which stood close by.

10, 5-6. **Sir Andrew Freeport.** The name "Freeport" indicates that Sir Andrew is a free-trader. The invention of names that reveal the character or profession of the bearer is a common practice among eighteenth-century authors.

10, 21-22. **"A penny saved is a penny got"** may have suggested the phrase "A penny saved is a penny earned," which occurs in Benjamin Franklin's *Poor Richard's Almanac*. In his

*Autobiography*, edited for this series by Frank W. Pine, pages 15-16, Franklin acknowledges that he was a diligent reader of the *Spectator*.

10, 31. **Owner.** This enthusiastic description of Sir Andrew's business abilities reveals Steele's pronounced Whig sympathies. The large and prosperous merchant class of the city belonged almost exclusively to the Whig party, whereas the landed aristocracy of the country was largely Tory.

11, 6. **Next heir to Sir Roger.** Captain Sentry afterwards inherits Sir Roger's estate. See introductory comment to No. XXXII.

11, 18-19. **Disposing:** dispensing rewards.

12, 4. **Humorists:** odd, eccentric fellows.

12, 14. **Habits:** styles of dress. We still say "riding-habit."

12, 16. **Mode:** fashion.

12, 22. **Female world.** The extravagance of contemporary fashion in feminine dress is a constant subject of satire in the *Spectator*. In *Spectator* No. 69 Addison writes: "The single dress of a woman of quality is often the product of an hundred climates. The muff and the fan come together from the different ends of the earth. The scarf is sent from the torrid zone and the tippet from beneath the pole. The brocade petticoat arises out of the mines of Peru, and the diamond necklace out of the bowels of Indostan."

12, 23. **Take notice to you:** call to your attention.

12, 24-25. **Duke of Monmouth.** The Duke of Monmouth (1649-1685) claimed to be the son of Charles II, and on that pretext made an attempt to deprive James II of the British throne. He was defeated by James II and executed on Tower Hill. Monmouth was a young man of pleasing manners and engaging personality.

12, 27. **Relations:** recitals.

12, 27. **The Park:** Hyde Park, the largest and most fashionable park in London.

13, 26. **R.** One of Steele's signatures. See note to 7, 23.

#### QUESTIONS

1. Distinguish between the class characteristics and the individual characteristics of the members of Mr. Spectator's club.

2. What different classes of society are represented by the several members of the club and what are the class characteristics of each member?
3. What members of the club bear names that indicate the class to which they belong?
4. What are the individual characteristics of each member?

### III. MR. SPECTATOR AT HIS CLUB

The present paper, together with the two preceding, serves as a general introduction to the *Sir Roger de Coverley* series. In the first paper Addison introduces Mr. Spectator, in the second Steele follows with a sketch of the several members of Mr. Spectator's club, and now Addison completes this little preliminary group by introducing Mr. Spectator in the company of his club associates.

(Motto).

"From spotted skins the leopard does refrain."—

JUVENAL, *Satire XV*, verses 156-160.

14, 23-24. The opera and the puppet-show. In preceding papers of the *Spectator*, Addison had criticised Italian opera, a fashionable entertainment recently introduced upon the London stage. Perhaps as a result of the ill-success of his own opera *Rosamond*, he remarks that "nothing is fit to be set to music that is not nonsense," and repeatedly ridicules the unnatural medley of English and Italian words heard at these performances. Towards the puppet—or Punch and Judy—show, which, as a domestic and less pretentious form of amusement, would naturally appeal more strongly to a sensible Englishman, he is more lenient, basing his strictures mainly upon the diminished popularity of church-going since Mr. Powell has set up his puppet-show in the immediate neighborhood of St. Paul's Church. For Addison's comments on the opera, see *Spectator* Nos. 5, 13, 14, and 18, and upon the puppet-show, No. 14.

15, 1. Dress and equipage of persons of quality. In *Spectator* No. 15 Addison had expressed his disapproval of "a coach adorned with gilded cupids," and in No. 16 had protested against "silver garters," "fringed gloves," "top-knots," and other fashionable fopperies.

15, 5. The city—as contrasted with "the whole city" (15,

7)—is used in a technical sense to denote that part of London devoted primarily to business—the part, that is, which centers about the Bank of England and which would naturally be of chief interest to a merchant such as Sir Andrew.

15, 12. Aldermen and citizens. Since Addison had not attacked the citizen class, it is probable that these words are intended as a warning, not as a rebuke.

15, 18. The wits of King Charles's time: the authors of the reign of Charles II, particularly the comic dramatists, such as Congreve, Farquhar, Vanbrugh, and Wycherley, who delighted to picture the follies of citizens and their wives.

15, 20. Horace, Juvenal, Boileau. Quintus Horatius Flaccus (B. C. 65-8) and Decimus Junius Juvenalis (A. D. 60-140) were famous Roman satirists; Nicholas Boileau-Despréaux (1637-1711) was a famous French satirist.

15, 26. Several persons of the Inns of Court. Addison had ridiculed the lawyer class in *Spectator* No. 21.

16, 4-5. Mention foxhunters with so little respect. There is no ground for Sir Roger's complaint. Addison has not only made no derogatory reference to foxhunters thus far but afterwards gives, in the *Freeholder* No. 22, a charming picture of that class. Steele, to be sure, makes a disparaging allusion to foxhunters in *Spectator* No. 474; but since that paper had not yet been written, it can have no bearing upon the present passage.

17, 19. The Roman triumvirate: Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus. Their debate is recorded by Plutarch in his *Life of Mark Antony*, edited by Skeat, page 169, and by Shakespeare in *Julius Caesar*, Act IV, scene i.

17, 29-30. If Punch grows extravagant. The reference is to Punch as played by a certain hunchback dwarf named Robert Powell, whose language appears to have been somewhat free. See *Tatler* No. 16.

#### QUESTIONS

1. State in your own words the doctrine which Addison seeks to teach in this paper.

2. In what way is the behavior of the several members of Mr. Spectator's club used to demonstrate the necessity for such a doctrine?

3. What is the particular applicability of the Roman fable to the situation that arises in Mr. Spectator's club?
4. Is there anything particularly appropriate in the selection of the clergyman as peacemaker in the dispute?

#### IV. A LADY'S LIBRARY

Strictly speaking, the present paper should not be included in the *Sir Roger de Coverley* series, for, with the exception of a casual reference to Sir Roger at the opening, the paper has nothing whatever to do either with that gentleman or with any other member of Mr. Spectator's club. It is included in the series because it represents that large and important portion of the *Spectator* in which Steele and Addison, abandoning altogether their original design of representing Mr. Spectator as the member of a club, allow that gentleman to discuss, without the aid of his club associates, a large variety of subjects which could not well be brought within the compass of that design. Among these subjects none was of greater interest to Addison than that of female affections; and the present paper affords an excellent example of the deliciously humorous manner in which he treats this general theme.

(Motto).

"Unbred to spinning, in the loom unskill'd."—

VIRGIL, *Aeneid*, book VII, verses 805-806.

18, 22. **Jars of china.** A craze for collecting china was then at its height. See Steele in *Tatler* No. 23, and Addison in *Spectator* No. 299.

19, 11. **Scaramouches:** miniature figures of clowns. Scaramuccia was the name of an Italian buffoon of the seventeenth century.

19, 11. **Mandarins:** diminutive figures of Chinese officials in ceremonial dress.

19, 14. **Snuffbox.** The taking of snuff was then a novelty. The learned lady of Addison's day was, therefore, as much "advanced" as her sister of to-day. In *Spectator* No. 344 Steele describes a lady who takes snuff at meals and another who takes it in the middle of a sermon. We may be permitted to suppose that these were also "reading" ladies.

19, 18. **Fagots:** dummy soldiers or persons hired to take the place of real soldiers at the muster of a regiment.

19, 26-27. Heard them praised or . . . seen the authors of them: a delightful bit of irony based upon the natural tendency of women to buy books for purely sentimental reasons.

19, 29. Ogilby's Virgil. The first complete English translation of Virgil was that made by John Ogilby in 1649-1650. It was poor as a translation but beautifully illustrated.

19, 30. Dryden's Juvenal. The satires of the Roman poet Juvenal were translated by John Dryden in 1693.

19, 31-33. Cassandra, Cleopatra, Astraea: long-winded French romances of the typically sentimental variety then in fashion among ladies of quality. The first two were by La Calprenède (1610-1663) and the last by Honoré D'Urfé (1568-1625). It is needless to add that Leonora read these authors likewise only in an English translation.

20, 1. The Grand Cyrus; a romance of the same type as the preceding, written by Mademoiselle de Scudéry (1607-1701).

20, 3. Pembroke's Arcadia: a romance written by Sir Philip Sidney in 1580-1581, and published after his death by his sister, the Countess of Pembroke, to whom it was dedicated.

20, 4. Locke of Human Understanding: an *Essay on the Human Understanding* by the famous philosopher, John Locke (1632-1704). It would be a safe guess that this book was not among the "few which the lady had bought for her own use."

20, 8. Sherlock upon Death: a *Practical Discourse concerning Death* by William Sherlock (1641-1707).

20, 9. The Fifteen Comforts of Matrimony: an English version of *Les Quinze Joies de Mariage*, a clever satire on women, written in 1450 by Antoine de La Salle.

20, 10. Sir William Temple. The Essays of this polished but conventional writer were published in 1692.

20, 11. Father Malebranche's Search after Truth: an English version of *La Recherche de la Vérité*, written in 1674 by the French philosopher, Nicholas Malebranche.

20, 14. The Academy of Compliments: an anonymous collection of guides to behavior.

20, 15. Culpepper's Midwifery: the *Complete Midwife's Practice* by Nicholas Culpepper (1616-1654).

20, 16. The Ladies' Calling: a companion volume to the *Whole Duty of Man*. Both were popular religious manuals of the seventeenth century.

20, 17. Tales in Verse by Mr. D'Urfey: *Tales, Tragical*



*and Comical*, written in 1704 by Thomas D'Urfey, poet and playwright.

20, 20. **A Set of Elzevirs** by the same hand: a set of books issued from the press of a famous seventeenth-century Dutch family of printers named Elzevir, and bound by the hand of the carpenter that did "the classic authors in wood" mentioned in the preceding line.

20, 21. **Clelia**: another romance by Mademoiselle de Scudéry. See note to 20, 1.

20, 23. **Baker's Chronicle**: a dull chronicle of the kings of England by Sir Richard Baker (1568-1645). Sir Roger de Coverley is constantly quoting Baker's *Chronicle*. See 111, 30; 117, 13; and 119, 30.

20, 24. **Advice to a Daughter**: the *Lady's New Year's Gift or Advice to a Daughter*, by George Savile, Marquis of Halifax (1633-1695).

20, 25. **The New Atlantis**, with a key to it: A scandalous romance by the notorious Mrs. Manley, in which Steele and other prominent Whigs were attacked under fictitious names. Hence the need of a key to it. The romance was published in 1709.

20, 26. **Mr. Steele's Christian Hero**. See *Introduction*, page x.

20, 27. **Hungary water**: a perfume, not a beverage.

20, 29. **Dr. Sacheverell's Speech**: a speech which Henry Sacheverell, a noted Tory divine, delivered in his own defense when impeached in 1710 before the House of Lords for preaching two violent sermons against the Whigs. Dr. Sacheverell's conviction at the hands of the Whig leaders made him a martyr in the eyes of the nation and helped to bring about the downfall of the Whig ministry later in the same year.

20, 30. **Fielding's Trial**: an account of the trial of a certain Robert Fielding, charged with bigamy.

20, 31. **Seneca's Morals**: an English translation of the *Moral Essays* of the Roman philosopher, Lucius Annæus Seneca (B. C. 3—A. D. 65).

20, 32. **Taylor's Holy Living and Dying**. The *Rule and Exercises of Holy Living* (1650) and the *Rule and Exercises of Holy Dying* (1651) are the titles of two devotional treatises composed by the noted English divine, Jeremy Taylor.

20, 33. **La Ferte's Instructions for Country Dances**. La Ferte was a fashionable dancing-master of the day.

21, 5. Hate long speeches. Observe how consistently Mr. Spectator maintains his character as a silent gentleman. Compare note to 4, 22.

21, 21. Particular: peculiar, odd.

21, 30. Turtles: turtle-doves.

22, 8. Consort: concert.

22, 24. I design to recommend such particular books: a promise never fulfilled by Mr. Spectator.

22, 27. Their thoughts upon it. These thoughts are published in *Spectator* No. 92.

#### QUESTIONS

1. In the preceding paper the clergyman suggested to Mr. Spectator that he might make his paper of great use to the public "by reprehending those vices that are too trivial for the chastisement of the law and too fantastic for the cognisance of the pulpit." Does Mr. Spectator act upon this suggestion in the present paper?

2. What various subjects are represented by the books in Leonora's library? Should you judge that these subjects covered the range of reading of the average cultivated person of Addison's day?

3. How many of the books in the library do you think that Leonora had purchased "for her own use" and how many "because she had heard them praised or seen the authors of them"?

4. In what languages were the foreign books in Leonora's collection written? Were these foreign languages read by educated people in Addison's day? If so, what inference would you draw from the fact that Leonora could read them only in translation?

5. What articles of a strictly feminine character does Mr. Spectator find in certain books in Leonora's library? Should you judge from the use made of these articles that Leonora was a serious reader or not?

6. Are you acquainted with any modern Leonoras?

#### V. PEDANTRY

The present paper is as little concerned with *Sir Roger de Coverley* as the preceding. It is included in the present series

because it serves to illustrate Addison's treatment of another favorite topic of his in the *Spectator*, that of good breeding. The duty of cultivating a general interest in many pursuits and of avoiding the narrowness due to an excessive addiction to any one pursuit was a cardinal maxim in the code of the eighteenth-century gentleman and one upon which a man of the broad cultivation of Addison was peculiarly fitted to speak with authority.

(Motto).

"Not to be too much addicted to any one thing I take to be a principal rule of life."

TERENCE, *Andrea*, act I, scene i, verses 33-34.

24, 19-20. His profession and particular way of life. Dr. Samuel Johnson expresses this same idea by saying: "Perfect good breeding consists in having no particular mark of any profession but a general elegance of manners; whereas in a military man you can commonly distinguish the brand of a soldier, *l'homme d'épée*."

24, 30. Ombre: the most fashionable game of cards in Addison's day. The game originated in Spain and is so called from the phrase "Yo soy l'hombre," used by the player who declared trumps. Pope gives an excellent description of the game in the third canto of his *Rape of the Lock*.

25, 10. Westminster Hall: a large hall in which law courts used to be situated but which now serves as a vestibule to the Houses of Parliament.

25, 16-17. The Gazette: the official journal of the government. Shortly before this time Steele had been editor of the *Gazette*. See *Introduction*, page x.

26, 3. Cry up: praise. We still say "decry."

26, 5. Collator of a manuscript. Before the invention of printing, the works of an author had to be copied by hand and errors were liable to creep into these copies by the carelessness of scribes. The collator of a manuscript was therefore one who compared or "collated" the various manuscript copies of a given author with a view to correcting these errors and restoring the original version of the author.

26, 8-9. A Greek particle . . . proper commas. A Greek particle is a minor word in a Greek sentence. Addison here pokes fun at those who devote their lives to the minute details of scholarship. A contrary view is, however, expressed by Robert Browning, who, in the *Grammarian's Funeral*, bestows

high praise upon the scholar who devoted a lifetime to an attempt to "settle" the "business" of a Greek particle.

### QUESTIONS

1. State in your own words the distinction which Addison draws between a person of broad cultivation and a pedant.
2. How many different kinds of pedants does Addison mention? Can you mention any additional varieties?
3. Had Addison, aside from the fact that he was himself an author, any reasons for being more lenient towards the book pedant than towards any other variety?

### VI. COVERLEY HALL

In this paper Sir Roger first emerges into conspicuous view and from now on to the end of the series holds the attention of the reader to the practical exclusion of every other member of Mr. Spectator's club.

(Motto).

"Here plenty's liberal horn shall pour  
Of fruits for thee a copious show'r,  
Rich honors of the quiet plain."

HORACE, *Odes*, book I, ode XVII, verses 14-16.

27, 14-15. A privy counselor: a member of the Privy Council, a body of men who acted towards the King of England in somewhat the same advisory capacity that the members of the American Cabinet act towards the President.

27, 16. Pad: an easy-riding horse.

27, 31. Pleasant upon any of them: good-naturedly jocose at the expense of any of them.

28, 11. A chaplain. In Addison's day it was customary for a country squire to employ a domestic chaplain to look after the spiritual welfare of himself, his family, and his tenantry. Owing to the low estate to which the church had fallen, the chaplain was rarely treated with the respect which we should show towards a clergyman to-day. Although the chaplain was permitted to dine with the squire, he was obliged to withdraw with the ladies when the wine was brought on the table, and, in general, was more apt to be treated as an inferior than as an equal.

28, 19. Humorist. See the note to 12, 4.

28, 19. Imperfections. In the second *de Coverley* paper Steele had represented Sir Roger as altogether free from faults (8, 5-6), whereas Addison in the present passage frankly allows him certain imperfections. This difference in the conception of Sir Roger is just what we might expect from the difference in the nature of the two authors. Steele, the moralist, prefers to paint Sir Roger as altogether virtuous; Addison, the artist, believes he can draw a more life-like portrait by representing the knight as partaking of the defects no less than of the excellences of our common nature.

28, 30. At his own table. In his ignorance of Latin and Greek, Sir Roger is a typical representative of the country squire of his day, who, as a rule, was poorly educated. Nevertheless Sir Roger appears to have been better acquainted with books than the average member of his class. Thus he is repeatedly quoting Baker's *Chronicle* (note to 20, 23) and supplies his chaplain with a large variety of the best sermons of the day (29, 18-21). Moreover his friend Leonora was a lady of decidedly literary ambitions, and his lady-love, the "perverse widow," was "a desperate scholar" (54, 1), and argued as well as "the best philosopher in Europe" (54, 14).

29, 8. Thinks he is. At his death Sir Roger "bequeathed to the chaplain a very pretty tenement with good lands about it" (137, 22-23).

29, 27. Bishop of St. Asaph. Probably William Beveridge (1637-1708) and not his successor, William Fleetwood (1656-1723), who was bishop of St. Asaph in Addison's day. The former had already published an important volume of sermons, whereas the sermons of the latter did not become generally known until after the time of the *Spectator*.

29, 28. Dr. South: Robert South (1634-1716), a high churchman and eloquent preacher. His sermons were published in six volumes in 1692.

29, 30. Archbishop Tillotson. The sermons of John Tillotson (1630-1694), Archbishop of Canterbury, were published in fourteen volumes, four of which appeared before his death.

29, 30-31. Bishop Sanderson: Robert Sanderson (1587-1663), chaplain to Charles I. The best edition of his sermons was published with his *Life* by Isaak Walton in 1687.

29, 31. Dr. Barrow: Isaac Barrow (1630-1677), a theologian and mathematician.

29, 31. Dr. Calamy: Edmund Calamy (1600-1666), chaplain

to Charles II. Unlike the other clergymen on Sir Roger's list, who belonged to the Church of England, Dr. Calamy was a Presbyterian divine.

30, 12. **Masters.** Benjamin Franklin likewise recommends that clergymen of ordinary ability repeat sermons composed by great masters of pulpit eloquence rather than attempt "laborious compositions of their own" (*Autobiography*, edited for this series by F. W. Pine, page 107). For this sound advice Franklin was, no doubt, again indebted to the *Spectator*. See note to 10, 21-22.

### QUESTIONS

1. At the beginning of this paper Mr. Spectator speaks of Sir Roger as of an old acquaintance. On what previous occasion have these two men been introduced in one another's company? Would not the familiar terms with which Mr. Spectator refers to Sir Roger imply that they had met on other occasions as well? If so, have we not a right to expect that these other meetings should have been described in previous papers?

2. What prevailing characteristic of Mr. Spectator is mentioned in the opening paragraph? Has this characteristic been noted before, and where? See note to 4, 22, and to 21, 5.

3. Addison does not describe Sir Roger directly, but indirectly, by bringing him into relation with his servants and showing how he acted towards them and how they acted towards him. Which of these methods is the more effective, and why?

4. Note how gradually Addison proceeds to unfold the character of Sir Roger by describing his relations (1) to his servants in general, (2) to his butler, and (3) to his chaplain. Does Addison introduce these several persons in the order which is rhetorically the most effective?

5. Sir Roger was a bachelor and, in default of wife and children, had come to look upon his servants as his family. Observe how every detail in the present paper serves to fortify this impression of Sir Roger as a father to his domestics.

### VII. THE COVERLEY SERVANTS

In this paper Steele concludes the sketch of the Coverley household begun by Addison in the paper that precedes. By continuing to lay emphasis upon the fatherly relation which Sir

Roger sustains to his servants, Steele brings this paper into admirable harmony with the last.

(Motto).

"The Athenians erected a large statue to Æsop, and placed him, though a slave, on a lasting pedestal: to show that the way to honor lies open indifferently to all."

PHÆDRUS, *Fables*, book II, epilogue, verses 1-3.

30, 17. Corruption of manners in servants: a subject already treated by Steele in *Spectator* No. 88.

30, 24-25. Industrious: purposely, as in the Latin "de industria."

31, 5. To be much beforehand: to have a good balance in the domestic treasury.

31, 14. Stripped: stripped of his livery, dismissed.

31, 30. Cast: cast off.

31, 33-34. Pleasant on this occasion. See note to 27, 31.

32, 12. Husband: economist.

32, 15-16. Spare a large fine when a tenement falls: remit the fine which the servant, as lessee, would legally have to pay to his landlord on taking possession of a tenement or property on which the old lease had expired (or "fallen").

32, 24. Independent livelihoods. Compare this statement with that made in the preceding paper (27, 6-11). How do you account for the inconsistency? See notes to 8, 11, and 28, 19 (second note).

32, 27. Visitants: visitors.

32, 29. Late: former.

33, 18. To prentice: to be apprenticed.

33, 32-33. Took off the dress he was in: took off the livery which the man wore as a badge of servitude. Notice the more complimentary terms here used as compared with the expression "stripped" in 31, 14.

#### QUESTIONS

1. Characterize as fully as possible Sir Roger's attitude towards his servants.

2. By what overt acts does Sir Roger express his feelings towards these servants?

3. Read what is said of the differences between the literary methods of Steele and of Addison in the *Introduction* (page xxii) and then illustrate these differences by a comparison of this paper with the preceding.

## VIII. WILL WIMBLE

Will Wimble does not, like Leonora, divert our attention from Sir Roger de Coverley. Though not a member of Mr. Spectator's club, Will Wimble was a constant visitor at Coverley Hall, and the cordial welcome which this harmless but ineffectual personage there receives throws a new and interesting side-light upon the character of Sir Roger.

(Motto).

"Out of breath to no purpose, and very busy about nothing."

PHÆDRUS, *Fables*, book II, fable V, verse 3.

34, 12. Wimble. The word "wimble"—when used as a common noun—is of the same derivation as the word "gimlet," and it has been suggested that by the choice of this name Addison meant to imply that Will Wimble was either "a small bore" or else that, though "always turning about," he made "a very small hole." These interpretations of the name, though supported by the numerous instances in which characters in the *Sir Roger de Coverley* papers bear names that are significant, appear in the present case far-fetched and fantastic.

34, 18. Jack: a pickerel or small pike.

34, 24. Twisted last week. In writing his account of Will Wimble, Addison apparently had in mind the description in *Tatler* No. 256 of Mr. Thomas Gules, who "never employed himself beyond the twisting of a whip or the making of a pair of nut-crackers, in which he only worked for his diversion, in order to make a present now and then to his friends."

35, 2-3. Sir John's eldest son has reference to no particular person, but to any young heir to whom Will Wimble may temporarily attach himself for the sake of a livelihood.

35, 9-10. Younger brother to a baronet. The eldest son of an English nobleman succeeds to the family title and estate; and it is usual for the younger sons, owing to a traditional prejudice against trade, either to enter one of the professions or if, like Will Wimble, they lack brains for professional life, to subsist, like that gentleman, upon the bounty of others. As is evident, however, from a later passage in the present paper (37, 13-33), the "younger sons" of Addison's day did not invariably abstain from trade, and in our own day they do so even less frequently than then.

35, 14. Hunts a pack of dogs: hunts with a pack of dogs.



35, 17. **May-fly**: an artificial fly for fishing.

35, 19. **Officious**: obliging.

35, 22. **Tulip-root**. Owing to a recent mania for tulips, the price of that bulb was exorbitant. Addison in *Tatler* No. 218 tells of a cook who mistook "a handful of tulip-roots for a heap of onions and by that means made a dish of porridge that cost above a thousand pounds sterling."

35, 27. **Made**: trained.

36, 1. **In the character of him**: in describing his character.

36, 28. **Foiled it**: tired it out.

36, 33. **Quail-pipe**: a pipe to imitate the call of a quail.

37, 8. **Affairs**: business.

37, 16. **Quality**: station in life.

37, 16. **Humor**. See note to 8, 7.

37, 21. **Best of their family**. Addison, like Steele, was a Whig and, like the latter, loses no opportunity to glorify the merchant class of which that party was largely composed. See note to 10, 31.

37, 28. **Improper**: unfit.

37, 33. **Twenty-first speculation**. In *Spectator* No. 21 Addison upholds the opportunities afforded by trade as superior to those afforded by the learned professions.

### QUESTIONS

1. By what indications at the opening of this paper are we given to understand that Will Wimble was a frequent visitor at Coverley Hall?

2. In what several pursuits does Will Wimble engage? What sort of a character does devotion to such pursuits show Will Wimble to have been?

3. What sort of a welcome does Will Wimble receive from Sir Roger? What inference would you draw therefrom respecting the character of the latter?

4. Are the remarks made by Mr. Spectator at the end pertinent to the subject of this paper or might they better have been omitted?

### IX. THE COVERLEY PORTRAITS

It is the custom of Steele and Addison to add little by little to our knowledge of Sir Roger by presenting him in each paper

in some new relation of life. Sir Roger has already been presented in the character of a master in relation to his servants and in that of a host in relation to his guest. In the present paper he is introduced as the possessor of a long gallery of family portraits and we are allowed to see the pride with which—like every country squire—he cherishes the memory of his ancestors. It was fortunate that the subject of Sir Roger's family portraits should have fallen to the lot of Steele, since he surpasses Addison in graphic, concrete portraiture. Observe with what few but masterly strokes he makes each ancestor step as though alive from the canvas. And yet these ancestors are described not so much for their own sake as for the purpose of making us better acquainted with Sir Roger. The delightful simplicity of the good knight is well illustrated by his evident pride in the heroic ancestor who "narrowly escaped being killed at the battle of Worcester."

(Motto).

"Of plain good sense, untutor'd in the schools."

—HORACE, *Satires*, book II, satire ii, verse 3.

38, 21. **Jetting:** jutting.

38, 21. **Bonnet:** cap.

38, 21. **Habit.** See note to 12, 14.

38, 22. **Harry the Seventh's time:** Henry VII, King of England, 1485-1509.

38, 22-23. **Yeoman of the Guard:** a body of men, popularly known as "beef-eaters," who constitute the bodyguard of the sovereign. They still wear the uniform here described.

39, 4. **Tilt-yard.** Prior to Addison's day the Tilt-yard was an open space of ground on which tournaments were held. In Addison's day a part of this open space had been converted into lots on which buildings stood, and a part, as stated in the next line, was used as a street.

39, 5. **Whitehall:** a royal palace in London, now no longer in existence.

39, 9. **Target:** shield.

39, 11. **Rid:** rode.

39, 18-19. **The Coffee-house:** a coffee-house kept by a certain Jenny Man on the site of the Tilt-yard, and hence known both as "Jenny Man's coffee-house" and as "the Tilt-yard coffee-house." It was frequented in Addison's day by military men.

39, 29. **Gathered at the waist.** Both the "old" and the

"new" style of petticoat were of the full, swelling variety known as the "hoop" petticoat. The chief difference between the two was that the old style was cut straight up and down so as to resemble a drum, whereas the new style was cut in at the waist so as to resemble a bell. Both styles stood out as much as possible from the figure instead of being cut close to the figure, as at the present time. Addison makes some amusing remarks on the large, "hoop" petticoat in *Spectator* No. 127.

39, 29. **Grandmother**: an abbreviation for the "great-great-great-grandmother" mentioned two lines above.

40, 2. **White-pot**: a dessert made of cream, rice, sugar, and currants, and flavored with cinnamon.

40, 13. **Romp**: an unruly or boisterous girl.

40, 13. **Matter**: loss.

40, 15. **Soft gentleman**: gentleman of effeminate manners.

40, 16. **Slashes**: slits made in an outer garment to reveal a more brilliant garment underneath.

41, 1-2. **Sir Andrew Freeport** has said. Sir Andrew consistently defends the interests of the business class. He afterwards reminds Sir Roger of the indebtedness of the latter's family to trade (107, 34 and following).

41, 5. **Winked at**: connived at.

41, 16. **Knight of this shire**: representative of the shire in Parliament.

41, 19. **Offices**: duties.

41, 27-28. **Husbandman**. See note to 32, 12.

41, 28. **Such a degree**: a certain degree.

42, 4. **Civil Wars**: the wars between the Roundheads, who supported Cromwell, and the Cavaliers, who supported Charles I. and his son, Charles II.

42, 6. **Battle of Worcester**: a battle in which Cromwell defeated the Scotch adherents of Charles II.

### QUESTIONS

1. How many ancestors of Sir Roger does Steele describe and what does he say of each?

2. Does Steele appear to be describing all of Sir Roger's ancestors or only a few of them? If the latter, what appears to have been the principle he followed in making the selection?

3. Is Steele more apt to limit his remarks about Sir Roger's ancestors to details actually depicted in their portraits or to

depart from the portrait and give details that are incapable of graphic representation? Which of these two methods of procedure is the more effective, and why?

## X. THE COVERLEY GHOST

In Addison's day a belief in ghosts, witches, and other supernatural beings still lingered to a large extent in the country. It was but natural, therefore, that in a series of papers that deal with the life of a country squire, some attention should be paid to these subjects. Accordingly Addison devotes the present paper to ghosts and a later paper (No. XIV) to witches. Moreover, quite apart from the appropriateness of this topic in the present series, Addison himself took a personal interest in the question as to the existence of supernatural beings. Indeed it must be acknowledged that he has in the present paper allowed this interest to divert his attention unduly from Sir Roger. The long quotations from Locke, Lucretius, and Josephus, interesting as they are to the student of spectral lore, add but little to our knowledge of Sir Roger.

(Motto).

"All things are full of horror and affright,  
And dreadful even the silence of the night."

VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book II, verse 755.

42, 19. **Psalms.** The quotation is made from the *Prayer Book* version of *Psalms* CXLVII, verse 9.

43, 12. **Harbors:** the object of the verb "covered."

43, 26. **Mr. Locke** in his chapter of the *Association of Ideas*. Locke treats this subject in his *Essay on the Human Understanding* (book II, chapter xxxiii, section 10).

45, 11. **Lucretius:** Titus Lucretius Carus (B. C. 98-55), a Roman philosophical poet. The idea referred to occurs in his *De Rerum Natura* (book IV, verse 26 and following).

45, 27. **Josephus:** Flavius Josephus (37-95), a Jew who wrote two histories of his own people in the Greek language. The "story" occurs in his *Antiquities of the Jews* (book XVII, chapter xiii, sections iv and v).

46, 18. **Those kings:** that is, the husbands of Glaphyra, of whom Josephus is speaking in the passage under consideration.

## QUESTIONS

1. By what circumstance does Addison make the topic of ghosts arise naturally out of Mr. Spectator's visit at Coverley Hall?
2. By means of what anecdote is Sir Roger made to contribute to the discussion upon ghosts? Should you, from this anecdote, infer that Sir Roger was or was not a believer in ghosts?
3. To judge from his words on the subject, should you say that Mr. Spectator was more or that he was less sceptical than Sir Roger on the subject of ghosts?

## XI. SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER

The country squire in Addison's day was by no means distinguished for piety or devotion, and whatever spiritual influence he might exert over his tenantry was exerted rather for the sake of maintaining good order and effective discipline than from any deep religious or spiritual conviction. Sir Roger is no exception to this rule. He attends church regularly, to be sure, but he does so rather that he may "count the congregation" than because he feels any special concern for the salvation of his own soul or of theirs. The humorous contrast between the standards of behavior which he demands of his tenants and those which he observes himself illustrates very admirably that eccentric element in the character of the knight which runs like a red thread through every fresh presentation of his character and which nowhere appears in a stronger light than in the present paper.

(Motto).

"First, in obedience to thy country's rites,  
Worship the immortal gods."

—PYTHAGORAS, *Carmina Aurea*, verses 1-2.

47, 18-19. The Change: the Exchange.

48, 3. Hassock: a cushion to kneel on.

48, 17. Particularities. See note to 21, 21.

48, 34. Polite: well-bred.

49, 9. Such an one's. See note to 41, 28.

49, 18. To the clerk's place: to the clerk's salary. In an English parish church the clerk is the layman who leads the congregation in reading the responses.

49, 31. **Tithe stealers.** A tax of a tenth ("tithe") of the annual income of a tenant was at that time exacted for the benefit of the clergy.

### QUESTIONS

1. What various details does Addison employ to make us realize that the Sunday with Sir Roger was spent in the country and not in the city?

2. What indications are there in this paper that Sir Roger regards church attendance rather as a useful means of enforcing discipline than as an act of religious devotion?

3. What eccentricities does Sir Roger display either in his own methods of religious observance or in the means he employs of enforcing religious observance among his dependents?

4. Should you call Sir Roger a conscious or an unconscious humorist? Which of these two types is usually the more amusing?

### XII. SIR ROGER IN LOVE

In the second *de Coverley* paper (8, 11-26) Steele referred to a love affair which Sir Roger had in his youth with a beautiful widow. In the present paper he resumes this subject and relates in some detail Sir Roger's relations with this lady. It is interesting to note that Sir Roger's love experiences are invariably treated by Steele, who, by reason of his more ardent temperament, was better fitted to do justice to this subject than Addison.

(Motto).

"Her looks were deep imprinted in his heart."

—VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book IV, verse 4.

50, 15. **I mentioned.** See 8, 11-26.

50, 22. **Settled upon one.** Steele is here speaking not seriously but humorously. He does not mean that "any part" of Sir Roger's estate was actually "settled upon" the widow by deed of gift, but only that it was so intimately associated with her in his mind as to seem to belong to her.

52, 5. **Assizes:** sessions of the petty jury. See note to 75, 7.

52, 7. **Event:** outcome.

52, 14. **A murrain to her:** a plague upon her.

54, 30. **The sphinx:** a she-monster who slew all who could

not answer the riddle which she propounded. The riddle ran as follows: "What animal goes on four feet in the morning, two at noon, and three at night?" Œdipus gave the right answer, "Man," and so saved his life.

54, 31. Posing her: outwitting her.

55, 4. Tucker: neckerchief.

55, 9. Tansy: a pudding flavored with the herb "tansy."

55, 25. That of Martial: that epigram of Martial. Marcus Valerius Martialis (38?-102?) was a famous Roman epigrammatist.

55, 26. "Dum tacet hanc loquitur": "even when silent he is speaking of her."

55, 27. Epigram: Martial's *Epigrams*, book I, epigram lxxviii. The last two verses of the epigram are not quoted.

#### QUESTIONS

1. In speaking of the widow how many times does Sir Roger declare that "she has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world"? What particular act of the widow helped to stamp this impression upon his memory?

2. Does Sir Roger lay greater stress upon the physical beauties or upon the mental endowments of the widow? What does he say of each?

3. On what memorable occasion did Sir Roger first behold the widow? Had he seen her frequently since that time?

4. Describe in detail how the widow treated Sir Roger when he called upon her. Had he good reason to resent this treatment?

5. Does Sir Roger recall his experiences with the widow with pleasure, or with pain, or with a mixture of both?

6. What effect did Sir Roger's experiences with the widow have upon his character? Were these effects such as one would expect?

#### XIII. SIR ROGER GOES A-HUNTING

The present paper, as well as Nos. XXVIII and XXX in this series, were written by Eustace Budgell, a cousin and intimate friend of Addison. After Addison's death Budgell drowned himself in the Thames because of a forgery he had committed in order to escape financial difficulties in which he

had become involved as a result of the collapse of the South Sea Bubble. Since hunting was one of the chief pastimes of the country squire, it would certainly not have been proper to omit a hunt from the list of Sir Roger's customary activities. Budgell appears to have contributed this paper because he was the son of a Devonshire squire and therefore more familiar with hunting than Steele or Addison.

(Motto).

"The echoing hills and chiding hounds invite."

—VIRGIL, *Georgics*, book III, verses 43-44.

56, 13. **Bastile**: a state prison in Paris, torn down by the infuriated populace on the eve of the French Revolution, July 14, 1789.

57, 16. **Stone-horse**: stallion.

57, 17. **Staked himself**: spiked himself on a fence he was trying to leap.

57, 21. **Stop-hounds**: hounds taught to stop short at a word from their master, as opposed to beagles, who cannot learn this trick and run straight ahead. Hunting with beagles—like fox-hunting—was too lively a sport for a man of Sir Roger's years, and therefore Budgell makes him hunt with stop-hounds, quite overlooking the fact that stop-hounds were no more used for hare-hunting than for fox-hunting.

57, 24. **Cry**: pack.

57, 25. **Concert**. This custom of selecting a pack with harmonious cries, though discontinued to-day, was in vogue long before Addison's day. King Henry II is reported to have had a pack "well-tongued and consonous," the quotation from Shakespeare (just below) proves that the custom prevailed in Queen Elizabeth's time, and the present passage indicates that it had not yet died out in the age of Queen Anne.

57, 31. **Counter-tenor**: a high tenor.

57, 33-34. **Midsummer Night's Dream**. The passage is quoted from act IV, scene i, verses 123-130.

58, 2. **Flewed**: provided with chaps or heavily overhanging upper lips.

58, 2. **Sanded**: distinguished by yellow or sand-colored blotches.

58, 4. **Dew-lapped**: having folds of skin hanging from beneath the throat, as in cattle.

58, 5. **Mouths**: incorrectly quoted for the singular form "mouth," which means bark.



58, 6. Each under each: each a musical note lower than the other.

58, 10. Pad. See note to 27, 16.

58, 11. Yesterday morning: that is, July 12, the day before the date of the present paper. Three lines above, Mr. Spectator states that "Sir Roger has been out almost every day since I came down." Since Mr. Spectator must have "come down" to Coverley Hall before July 2, the date of the first paper written from Sir Roger's, Budgell stands convicted of the serious blunder of making Sir Roger hunt repeatedly in the month of July, which was not, of course, the hunting season. It is strange that Budgell, who, as already said, was the son of a country squire and who throughout this paper displays great familiarity with the technical details of a hunt, should have made this mistake. Compare the note to 57, 21.

58, 19. Beat: beat the bushes to arouse game.

58, 28. "Yes." See note to 4, 22.

59, 15. Opened: bayed.

60, 6. His pole: a long pole used for vaulting ditches by those who followed the chase cross country on foot.

60, 22. Pascal: Blaise Pascal (1623-1662), a famous French geometrician and philosopher. His greatest work was published after his death under the title *Pensées de M. Pascal sur la Religion*. The present passage is taken from the seventh article of the first part of the *Pensées*, entitled *Misère de L'homme*.

61, 8-9. Too great an application to his studies in his youth. Pascal was one of those few men—few indeed nowadays—who brought himself to a premature grave by over-study in youth. At the age of sixteen he wrote a Latin treatise on Conic Sections and tells us that from the age of eighteen he never passed a day of his life without pain.

61, 21. Mr. Dryden: John Dryden (1631-1700), a famous English poet. The lines occur in an *Epistle to his Kinsman, J. Driden Esq., of Chesterton*, verses 73-4; 88-95.

61, 31. X. See note to 7, 23.

#### QUESTIONS

1. Can you find in the form of expression used at the opening of the second paragraph any indication that this paper was written by a new hand?

2. Budgell was an Oxford graduate and a man of marked literary ability. Do each of these facts help to explain the presence of the Shakespearean quotation in this paper?

3. Is the quotation from *Midsummer Night's Dream* appropriately introduced? Has anything been said in the preceding paragraph to suggest it? What is it?

4. Give a detailed description of the Coverley hunt.

5. Can you mention any points of resemblance or of difference between the method of conducting a hare-hunt in Sir Roger's day and in our own day?

6. Budgell uses a number of technical hunting terms in this paper. What are these? Are any of these terms in use to-day? What are they?

#### XIV. THE COVERLEY WITCH

Addison is guilty of no exaggeration when he represents Mr. Spectator as saying that he has heard that "there is scarce a village in England that has not a Moll White in it." Even highly educated people of a much later period still continued to believe in witches. In 1770 John Wesley wrote in his Journal, "I cannot give up . . . the existence of witches till I give up the credit of all history, sacred and profane." And two years later Dr. Samuel Johnson acknowledged that "You have," in support of witchcraft, "not only the general report and belief, but many solemn, voluntary confessions." In Addison's day people not only believed in witches but they were quite ready to act upon that belief. Less than twenty years before the present paper was written many persons had been executed as witches in Salem, Massachusetts; more recently two women had been hung in Northampton, England, on the same charge; and five years after the date of the present paper a Mrs. Hicks and her nine-year-old daughter were executed in Huntingdon for "selling their souls to the devil, making their neighbors vomit pins, etc." It was not until 1736 that a statute enacted by James I in 1603, making witchcraft a capital offense, was repealed and the punishment of witches by death rendered henceforth and forever unlawful.

(Motto).

"With voluntary dreams they cheat their minds."

VIRGIL, *Eclogue VIII*, verse 108.

63, 2. Neuter: neutral.

63, 12. **Otway:** Thomas Otway (1652-1685), a well-known tragic dramatist. The passage which follows is taken from his tragedy, the *Orphan*, act II, scene i.

63, 16. **Rheum:** a mucous discharge from the eyes.

63, 21. **Nothing of a piece.** The word "a" is here used in its original sense of "one." "Nothing of a piece," therefore, means "everything different."

63, 22. **Weeds:** garments.

63, 30-31. **Carried her several hundreds of miles.** An allusion, of course, to the current belief that witches rode through the air on broomsticks or other equally unsubstantial supports. According to the next page (64, 20), Moll White has a broomstick behind her door.

64, 1-2. **Saying her prayers backwards.** Only a few months after the present paper was written, a certain Jane Wenham of Hertfordshire was condemned to death as a witch because, among other supposed evidences of guilt, she was unable to repeat the Lord's Prayer.

64, 3. **Take a pin of her.** An allusion to the current belief that the bodies of bewitched persons contained pins. According to the next page (65, 4-5), Moll White had been accused of making "children spit pins."

64, 22. **Tabby cat.** A black cat frequently figured in witchcraft stories, since witches were supposed to hold intercourse with Satan and since Satan was supposed frequently to assume the disguise of a black cat.

65, 7. **Trying experiments with her:** that is, to see whether she would swim or not. If she floated she would be judged guilty, if she sank, innocent. Thus she would lose her life in either case.

65, 12. **County sessions:** quarter sessions. See note to 75, 7.

### QUESTIONS

1. Distinguish the difference of attitude towards witchcraft held successively by (1) Sir Roger's tenants, (2) Sir Roger, (3) Sir Roger's chaplain, and (4) Mr. Spectator.

2. Is it possible to reconcile Mr. Spectator's statement that he believes "in general that there is such a thing as witchcraft" with his further statement that he "can give no credit to any particular instance of it"?

3. Of what particular incriminating acts was Moll White

supposed to be guilty? See notes to 63, 30-31, 64, 1-2, 64, 3, and 64, 22.

4. Observe that in the present paper Addison has brought his discussion of witches into much closer connection with Sir Roger than he had his discussion of ghosts in No. X. To what difference in treatment is this improvement due?

## XV. SIR ROGER TALKS OF THE WIDOW

Observe that this second paper upon Sir Roger's relations with the widow is again written by Steele. Re-read the introductory comment to paper No. XII.

(Motto).

"The fatal dart

Sticks in his side, and rankles in his heart."

—VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book IV, verse 73.

66, 15. Grove sacred to the widow: mentioned on page 50, line 24.

68, 10. Personated: affected, assumed.

69, 2. Susan Holliday: a rival.

69, 6. Kate Willow: a mischief-maker.

69, 27. Woman. Sir Roger here reverts to the widow.

69, 33-34. To this dear image in my heart owing: owing to this dear image in my heart.

## QUESTIONS

1. This entire paper turns upon the danger of having a confidante. What three situations described in this paper illustrate this danger? Which of these three situations appeals most powerfully, and which least powerfully, to our feelings?

2. By what peculiar mannerisms does Sir Roger betray his agitation when talking of the widow?

3. Is it natural for a person as agitated as Sir Roger to stop and tell a story as purely imaginary as that of Orestilla and Themista? Would Addison have been likely to make such a representation?

4. In what way is the incident of the lovers in the wood made to illustrate the danger of having a confidante?

5. On what previous occasions has reference been made (1) to the widow's confidante, (2) to the widow's learning, and (3)

to the idea that Sir Roger's love experiences have unsettled his brain? See No. XII.

## XVI. TOWN AND COUNTRY MANNERS

The contrast here drawn between the town and the country springs so naturally from the visit of the city-bred Mr. Spectator at the country seat of Coverley Hall as to render the absence of any direct reference to Sir Roger entirely unnoticeable.

(Motto).

"The city men call Rome, unskilful clown,  
I thought resembled this our humble town."

—VIRGIL, *Eclogue I*, verses 20-21.

71, 10-11. Conversation: social intercourse.

71, 12. Modish. See note to 12, 16.

71, 19-20. The fashionable world is grown free and easy. City manners in Addison's day—though somewhat more strict than in the period of general relaxation that immediately followed the Restoration of Charles II in 1660—still remained "free and easy" when compared with the more formal and ceremonious manners of the country.

71, 25. Manners of the last age. As is always the case, the country people of Addison's time aped the manners of a by-gone generation of fashionable folk. In fact they were so far behind the time that they had not even caught up with the lax manners of Charles II's reign but still continued to copy the courtly ceremony of a more remote age.

71, 31. Conversed. See note to 71, 10-11.

71, 34. To do: fuss, ceremony. Our expression "ado" is an abbreviation of "to do."

73, 23-24. Red coats and laced hats. These came into vogue at the time of the Revolution in 1688 and were therefore fashionable about twenty years before the present paper was written. In 1711 the red coat had become superseded by a coat of a quieter color and the laced hat by a cocked hat of black felt.

73, 25-26. The height of their head-dresses. In *Spectator* No. 98 Addison wrote: "There is not so variable a thing in nature as a lady's head-dress. Within my own memory I have known it rise and fall above thirty degrees. About ten years ago it shot up to a very great height, in so much that the female

part of our species were much taller than the men. . . . I remember several ladies who were once very near seven feet high, that at present want some inches of five."

73, 27-28. The western circuit: one of the judicial districts of England and Wales.

73, 32. Letter from him: published in *Spectator* No. 129.

### QUESTIONS

1. In what sense does Mr. Spectator use the term "manners" in this paper? Do we still use the word in the same sense?

2. The paper on *Pedantry* (No. V) likewise deals with the general subject of manners. By whom was this paper written? Should you judge that Steele or Addison was better fitted to deal with the subject of manners? Why? See introductory comments to Nos. IV and V.

3. Is it still true that country folk love to imitate the manners of dwellers in town? What examples can you give from your own experience?

4. In what three respects does Mr. Spectator say that the inhabitants of the country imitate city dwellers? What particular examples does he mention under each head?

5. Does Mr. Spectator institute the present comparison between town and country in order to point a moral? If not, for what purpose is the comparison made?

### XVII. SIR ROGER AT THE ASSIZES

Among the various activities of the English country squire, is the local administration of justice. In the second paper of the present series, Steele represented Sir Roger as a "justice of the quorum" and as "filling the chair at a quarter session with great abilities" (9, 1-3); and again in the twelfth paper, by the same author, it is in the capacity of "sheriff" that Sir Roger attends the trial in which the "perverse widow" appears as defendant (52, 20). In pursuance of these earlier hints, Addison, in the present paper, pictures Sir Roger as still fond of exercising judicial authority on all possible occasions. The paper furnishes one of the best examples of the easy grace and perfect good breeding which characterize Addison. Notice that in place of a dull and prolonged account of proceedings

at court, Addison enlivens the paper by a peculiarly appropriate sketch of the litigious Tom Touchy at the opening and by the grotesque and wholly unexpected story of the "Saracen's Head" at the end. The clever ruse by which, at the close of the paper, Mr. Spectator turns Sir Roger's own weapon against him, makes of this paper one of the most delightful specimens of Addisonian humor.

(Motto).

"An agreeable companion upon the road is as good as a coach."

—PUBLIUS SYRUS, *Fragments*.

74, 19. County assizes. See note to 75, 7.

74, 21. Rid: rode.

74, 26. Just within the Game Act. This act provided that one must have an annual income of forty pounds a year or two hundred pounds' worth of goods and chattels in order to be allowed to shoot game.

75, 7. Petty jury. The "petty" or small jury differed from the "grand" or large jury in that the former actually tried cases, whereas the latter merely decided whether the evidence produced against a person was sufficient to warrant trial. Both juries exercised jurisdiction in both civil and criminal cases, and so differed from the courts held by justices of the peace, which passed judgment in criminal cases exclusively. The sittings of the petty jury were called "assizes" (52, 5) or "county assizes" (74, 19), as distinguished from the sittings of the justices of the peace, which were known as "quarter-sessions" (9, 2) or "county sessions" (65, 12).

75, 8. Tom Touchy. A further instance of a name which at once betrays the character of the bearer. See note to 10, 5-6.

75, 9. Taking the law of everybody: going to law with everybody.

75, 17-18. Cast and been cast: won and lost.

75, 19. Going upon the old business of the willow-tree: a characteristic instance of the trivial injuries for which Tom Touchy was in the habit of seeking legal redress.

75, 26. Such a hole: See note to 41, 28.

77, 19. Saracen's Head. In the early days, before people could read, it was customary to designate inns or shops by means of a swinging signboard upon which some figure was painted. Hence the names "Red Lion," "Spotted Calf," "Boar's Head," etc., still applied to inns in rural England and

America. The name "Saracen's Head"—like the even more common "Turk's Head"—indicates that this practice ran back to the time of the Crusades. The ugliness of the Saracen's head is due, of course, to the fact that the English, as Christians, would naturally give the Saracens as monstrous faces as possible.

## QUESTIONS

1. What eccentricities does Sir Roger betray in court?
2. In what respects do these eccentricities resemble those which he exhibited at church (No. XI)? Do these peculiarities appear due to his disappointment in love? If not, to what cause do they appear to be due?
3. What indications are there that Sir Roger's country acquaintances are less quick than Mr. Spectator to perceive these idiosyncrasies? Why should there be this difference?
4. What humiliating incident is related at the end of the paper? How is it related to the opening conversation with Tom Touchy? In what way may this incident be said to illustrate the maxim "Pride cometh before a fall"?

## XVIII. EUDOXUS AND LEONTINE

Although the story contained in the following paper has nothing to do with Sir Roger, nevertheless the incident by which it is suggested is one which would naturally occur in a Tory neighborhood, such as that of Coverley Hall. "Young heirs and elder brothers" (79, 2-3) belonged, for the most part, to the Tory party and preferred to live on the large country estates of their ancestors rather than in town, where the commercial interests of the enterprising Whig merchants proved less congenial to men of their leisurely habits. Thus by referring at the opening of the paper to a young heir whom Mr. Spectator happens to observe in the neighborhood of Sir Roger's, Addison contrives, as in previous papers, to bring a story, which in itself has no direct bearing upon Sir Roger, into a sort of external conformity with the series as a whole.

(Motto).

"Yet the best blood by learning is refined,  
And virtue arms the solid mind;



Whilst vice will stain the noblest race,  
And the paternal stamp efface."

HORACE, *Odes*, book IV, Ode IV, verses 33-36.

79, 16. **Like a novel.** The word novel meant in those days a short tale—corresponding to the Italian *novella*—and not the long complicated story which we now call a novel. The novel in this modern sense had not yet come into existence, being the creation of Richardson, Fielding, and Smollett in the middle of the eighteenth century.

79, 32. **Gazette.** See note to 25, 16-17.

80, 7. **According to Mr. Cowley.** "There is no fooling with life when it is once turned beyond forty." This sentence occurs in an essay on the *Danger of Procrastination* by the poet and essayist, Abraham Cowley (1618-1667).

80, 13. **Of three hundred a year:** yielding an income of three hundred pounds a year.

81, 12. **Dictated:** led.

81, 27. **Inns of Court.** See note to 9, 6-7.

82, 28. **Salutes:** salutations.

83, 22. **Education.** In a letter to his friend Edward Wortley Montagu, of the same date as this paper, Addison writes: "Being very well pleased with this day's *Spectator*, I cannot forbear sending you one of them, and desiring your opinion of the story in it. When you have a son I shall be very glad to be his Leontine, as my circumstances will probably be like his. I have within this twelve-month lost a place of £2,000 per annum, an estate in the Indies of £14,000 and, what is worse than all the rest, my mistress. Hear this and wonder at my philosophy." The last of the misfortunes recited in this letter appears to refer to a setback in Addison's courtship of the Countess of Warwick, whom he afterwards married. In spite of this reverse, Addison has composed in the present paper a very happy love story and thereby gives evidence of that admirable evenness of temper with which he always successfully confronted the practical difficulties of life.

#### QUESTIONS

1. Does the story told in this paper appear to have been suggested by the young Tory heir or does the young Tory heir appear to have been introduced in order to make room for the

story? Which of these two possible methods of procedure would be the more artistic, and why?

2. Can you detect in this paper the presence of any literary qualities that distinguish the work of Addison from that of Steele? What are they? See *Introduction*, page xxii.

3. Should you judge from this paper that Addison was a good story-teller or not? Give reasons for your answer.

### XIX. THE EVILS OF PARTY SPIRIT

In Addison's day the English nation was divided into two rival parties, the Whigs and the Tories. Certain fundamental differences distinguished these two parties from one another. In the first place, the Tories were the successors of the earlier Royalist party and, as such, held more or less faithfully to the theory of "the divine right of kings." The Whigs, on the other hand, were the descendants of the earlier Puritan party and believed in the supremacy of Parliament. In the second place, the Tories, like the earlier Royalists, advocated the supervision of religion by the State and therefore supported the Established Church. The Whigs, on the other hand, believed in the right of each individual to choose his own form of worship and were, therefore, largely Dissenters. In the third place, the Tory party was largely composed of the landed aristocracy, who lived on their ancestral estates in the country. The Whig party, on the other hand, was largely made up of the growing merchant class of the city. At the particular time of the *Spectator*, still a fourth ground of difference between the two parties was occasioned by the war with France. This was undertaken to prevent a union between France and Spain and was at first popular with both parties. As time went on, however, the Tories began to oppose the prosecution of the war, since, according to the laws of the time, they, as the land-holding class, had largely to defray the cost of it. In this they were opposed by the Whigs, who, both for patriotic and for selfish reasons, desired to continue the war. Although, in the days of Addison, the Whigs were the growing party, they had not yet succeeded in overcoming the power of the Tories and the ministry passed alternately from the hands of one party into the hands of the other. Addison, though a member of the Whig party, had tried from the beginning to keep the *Spectator* out of politics and in the first number of that periodical announced it as his policy

"to observe an exact neutrality between the Whigs and the Tories" (6, 3-4). In this endeavor he did not, however, always gain the coöperation of Steele, who on two occasions used the *Spectator* as a vehicle for the expression of his own Whig sympathies, displaying thereby a spirit of partisanship which offended Addison and helped to bring about the discontinuance of that journal.

In this and in the following paper Addison points out the peculiar evils incident to this spirit of faction in the nation. By claiming that this spirit of party antagonism rages more fiercely in the country than in the city and by making Mr. Spectator the witness of several instances of it during his visit at Sir Roger's, Addison brings the discussion of this topic into relation with the *de Coverley* series.

(Motto).

"This thirst of kindred blood, my sons, detest,  
Nor turn your force against your country's breast."

VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book VI, verses 833-834.

84, 1-2. Roundheads and Cavaliers. During the period of the Civil War the Puritans were nicknamed "Roundheads" because they cut their hair short (as everybody now does) instead of allowing it to fall gracefully over their shoulders according to the practice of their opponents, the Cavaliers or Royalists.

84, 4. St. Anne's Lane. This lane has been respectively identified with two lanes in Addison's day, one turning out of St. Peter's Street, Westminster, and the other just north of St. Martin's-le-Grand, near Aldersgate Street. It is probable that the former is the lane referred to.

84, 9. Prick-eared cur: an epithet applied to the Puritans because, like the dog of that name, they wore their hair short so as to leave their ears uncovered.

84, 20-21. Tend to the prejudice of the land-tax: because the Whigs, who favored a continuation of the war with France, could, by means of the land-tax, make the land-owning Tories pay for it.

85, 7. Plutarch: the famous Greek historian and moralist (46-120). The passage referred to is entitled *How a Man may be benefited by his Enemies* and occurs in his *Morals*, pages 201 and following, translated by Shilleto (George Bell, London, 1898).

85, 16. That great rule: *St. Luke*, chapter VI, verse 27.

85, 19-21. Many good men . . . alienated from one another. Among other instances Addison may have had in mind his own alienation from his friend Jonathan Swift, who had recently gone over to the Tory party.

86, 19. *Postulatums*: postulates, principles the truth of which is assumed or taken for granted.

86, 30. *Guelfs and Ghibellines*: the two rival political parties in medieval Italy. The Guelfs supported the Pope; the Ghibellines, the Emperor.

86, 31. *The League*: a French political party, known as the Holy Catholic League, formed in 1576 to resist the claims of Henry of Navarre to the throne and to check the advance of Protestantism.

87, 10-11. The "love of their country." Dr. Samuel Johnson had the same idea in mind when he said "Patriotism is the last refuge of a scoundrel."

#### QUESTIONS

1. What political evil does Addison attack in this paper? Was this evil peculiar to the England of Addison's day or does it appear in all nations at all times?

2. What purpose is served by the humorous anecdote placed at the beginning of the paper?

3. In what way does the quotation from Plutarch serve to illustrate the thought of the paper?

4. What parallel exists between the relation of the Whigs to the Tories in England and that of the Guelfs to the Ghibellines in Italy?

5. Observe how skilfully Addison demonstrates the evils of one single abuse by having recourse to the several devices of (1) anecdote, (2) quotation, and (3) historical parallel. In this way he succeeds admirably in combining unity with variety.

#### XX. THE EVILS OF PARTY SPIRIT (Continued)

In this paper Addison continues the subject he has begun in the preceding paper. This continuation furnishes the only instance in the series in which one and the same subject is treated by the same author in two consecutive papers. The subject of

the Coverley servants has, to be sure, occupied two such papers (Nos. VI and VII), but the first of these papers was written by Addison and the second by Steele. The subject of party spirit and the diseases it has wrought in the body politic was one of far greater interest to Addison than to Steele and one, therefore, which the former would hardly have cared to share with the latter. Indeed it was doubtless Addison's sense of the urgent need of tempering the excesses of faction that led him to devote two consecutive papers to this single theme. Observe, however, that he has avoided monotony by following a different method of treatment in each paper. In the first paper he diagnosed the disease and in the present paper he proposes a remedy. By thus changing his point of view he has written two distinct papers upon a subject which, if treated in one, might have grown tiresome and would certainly have exceeded the usual length of a daily *Spectator*.

(Motto).

"Rutulians, Trojans are the same to me."

—VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book X, verse 108.

89, 14. **Diodorus Siculus:** a Greek historian of the first century before Christ, born, as his name implies, in Sicily. He wrote a *Historical Library* in forty books. The passage referred to occurs in book I, section xxxv.

89, 16. **Ichneumon:** a small animal, shaped like the weasel.

89, 31. **His destroyer.** Addison appears to have in mind the political enemies of the famous Duke of Marlborough who, five months later, had had him dismissed from the army and deprived of all his offices.

90, 27. **Bait:** stop for refreshment. The verb "bait" is etymologically connected with the verb "bite" and means to give, usually to horses, a "bite" to eat.

#### QUESTIONS

1. By what remedy does Mr. Spectator propose to correct the evil of which he complained in the last paper?
2. Should you say that the humorous resolution which he drafts for the signature of adherents would act to the credit or to the discredit of his cause?
3. For what two reasons does Mr. Spectator draw his illustrations of the bitterness of party spirit from the country rather than from the city?

4. Is it true that the spirit of political faction is apt to rage more violently in the country than in the city?

## XXI. SIR ROGER AND THE GIPSIES

The present paper upon gipsies belongs to the same general class as the paper on ghosts (No. X) and the paper on the Coverley witch (No. XIV). All three spring naturally from Mr. Spectator's visit in the country and are interesting chiefly as showing the effect produced by the supposedly supernatural upon the minds of simple country folk. These two earlier papers should be re-read in connection with the present paper. (Motto).

"A plundering race, still eager to invade,  
On spoil they live, and make of theft a trade."

VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book VII, verses 748-749.

92, 11-12. Exert the justice of the peace: exert his authority as justice of the peace.

93, 2. Crosses their hands with a piece of silver: an allusion to the ill-repute under which the gipsies lived. It was supposed that by making the sign of the cross upon the hand of a gipsy it would be possible to avert any evil influence that he might exert.

93, 12. Jades: young women of loose habits.

93, 19. Cassandra. Addison's application of the name Cassandra to the gipsies is inappropriate. Cassandra, daughter of Priam, king of Troy, was granted the gift of true prophecy but it was subsequently decreed that her prophecies should never be believed. What Addison means to assert with regard to the gipsies is, however, the exact converse of this, viz., that their prophecies, though false, are always believed.

93, 28. Widow in his line of life. Addison here fails to distinguish "the line of life," by which a palmist predicts the age to which one will live, from the marriage line, by which he foretells the person or persons whom one will marry.

93, 29. Idle baggage: worthless young flirt. The word "baggage," like the word "jade" (93, 12), is an instance of eighteenth-century slang.

94, 4. Leer: glance.

94, 17. Who was no conjurer: that is, no gipsy. The gipsies are called "conjurers" because they are supposed to read the future from the lines of the hand.

94, 29. Hackney-boat: a boat that plies for hire. The word "hackney" originally meant a horse kept for hire; the word was then applied to a coach (as in our abbreviated expression "hack") or boat which ran for hire.

95, 11. Gave him for drowned: gave him up for drowned.

### QUESTIONS

1. Is Sir Roger represented from the beginning as inclined to believe in the prophecies of the gipsies or is his credulity first aroused by the statement that he has "a widow in his line of life"?

2. What humorous effect is produced by introducing Sir Roger's experience with the beggar immediately after his interview with the gipsies?

3. What qualities in the character of Sir Roger are illustrated by his treatment of the beggar?

4. Do you feel that the story of the Dutch boy's adventures improves or injures the paper? Give reasons for your answer.

## XXII. MR. SPECTATOR DECIDES TO RETURN TO LONDON

This paper is the last of the seventeen papers that deal with Mr. Spectator's visit at Coverley Hall. It serves also as a transitional paper intended to connect these papers with a later series of seven papers that deal with a return visit which Sir Roger pays Mr. Spectator in London. The letter from Will Honeycomb and the reference therein contained to Mr. Spectator's "club" (98, 34) again call to mind the central design of the *Spectator*, and indicate that, however engrossed Steele and Addison may become in Sir Roger, they never allow us to forget altogether the other club associates of Mr. Spectator.

(Motto).

"Once more, ye woods, adieu."

—VIRGIL, *Eclogue X*, verse 63.

96, 21. Spring. "Spring"—as well as "put up," two lines below—is, of course, a hunting term, meaning to rouse game from cover.

96, 25. Foil: deaden.

97, 3-4. Westminster. To-day Westminster and London are built together as one city. Administratively, however, they

have always formed two separate communities, each with a government of its own. In Addison's day the civil independence of each was emphasized by a narrow strip of open country which lay between them.

97, 8-9. **My love of solitude, taciturnity, and particular way of life.** Observe with what admirable consistency reference is repeatedly made to the original description of Mr. Spectator as a silent gentleman. See notes to 4, 22, and 21, 5.

97, 19. **Cunning man: a magician.** Etymologically "cunning" means "knowing."

97, 22. **"White Witch."** Witches were traditionally divided into three classes, black, white, and gray. The first were always harmful, the second always helpful, and the third sometimes harmful and sometimes helpful. Mr. Spectator humorously represents himself as a "white witch" since in curing Moll White of her supposedly harmful qualities he would be performing a beneficial act.

97, 26. **Harbor a Jesuit in his house.** Although this is the first paper in the Sir Roger de Coverley series in which Mr. Spectator is represented as masking his identity under the disguise of a Jesuit, he has been so represented twice before in papers that lie outside of the series. In *Spectator* No. 4 that gentleman declares, "I was once taken up for a Jesuit, for no other reason but my profound taciturnity"; and in No. 44 Will Honeycomb says of Mr. Spectator, "I was once his bail in the time of the Popish plot, when he was taken up for a Jesuit." By these repeated allusions to the qualities with which they originally endowed Mr. Spectator, Steele and Addison give admirable consistency to the character of that gentleman throughout the *Spectator*. Compare note to 97, 8-9.

97, 34. **Out of place.** Addison himself was likewise a Whig out of place at this time. For in the preceding year he had, as a result of the downfall of the Whig ministry, lost his post as Secretary to Ireland. This passage affords another example of Addison's habit of weaving into his papers veiled allusions to political events of the day. Compare note to 89, 31.

98, 2-3. **A disaffected person.** A Whig in the company of Tories must be "disaffected" or out of favor with his own party. The expressions "disaffected person" and "popish priest" refer, respectively, to the "discarded Whig" and the "Jesuit" mentioned on the last page.

98, 3. **Popish priest.** Roman Catholics were in bad repute



in England ever since the Stuart king, James II (1685-1688), had endeavored to force the Roman faith on his subjects. The Established or Anglican Church had, of course, remained Protestant from the days of Henry VIII; and to keep it so the War of the Revolution had been fought in 1688 in order to place the Protestant Prince, William of Orange, on the throne. Although Queen Anne favored the Established Church, there still remained, in the days of Addison, Catholics in England who cherished the hope that Prince "Jamie," the exile son of James II, might one day be restored to the throne of his father. For this reason Jesuits and other adherents of Catholicism were still regarded with suspicion. In the opening chapters of *Henry Esmond*, Thackeray draws a vivid picture of the bold intrigues by which, shortly before the appearance of the *Spectator*, designing Jesuits sought to restore the exiled house of Stuart.

99, 4-5. **Stories of a cock and bull.** We still apply the term "cock and bull story" to any event of an improbable nature. The papal bull bears the impression of "St. Peter," of whom the popes were supposed to be the successors, and of the "cock," which crowed when Peter denied Christ. Hence, after the Reformation, which discredited the decrees of the pope, the term "cock and bull story" would naturally be applied to anything in which no one believed.

99, 11-12. **Commonwealth's men.** As a Whig, Sir Andrew would naturally inherit the traditions of the Puritans who, under the leadership of Oliver Cromwell, ruled England in the days of the Commonwealth. Compare the introductory comment to paper No. XIX.

#### QUESTIONS

1. What is the point of the extended comparison with which Mr. Spectator opens the present paper?
2. Mr. Spectator says that he has made "a month's excursion out of town." Is it possible to verify this statement by reference to the dates placed at the opening of each *Spectator*? How would you proceed to do so?
3. What reasons does Mr. Spectator give for wishing to return to London? Explain in what way these reasons harmonize with what we already know of the character of Mr. Spectator.

## XXIII. THE JOURNEY TO LONDON

The narrative told in the following paper illustrates two characteristic traits of Steele, his chivalry towards women and his love of a moral. Steele was always a devoted admirer of the "fair sex" and is said to have once addressed to Mistress Elizabeth Hastings that most delicate of all compliments to a lady, "To love her is a liberal education." The genuine respect which Steele bore all womankind is brought out, in the present paper, in the reprimand which Ephraim, the Quaker, offers the recruiting officer. Steele's less admirable love of sermonizing is abundantly illustrated in his plays and, in the present paper, finds expression in the useful but obvious advice with which Ephraim follows up his rebuke to the recruiting-officer.

(Motto).

"That man may be called impertinent who considers not the circumstances of time, or engrosses the conversation, or makes himself the subject of his discourse, or pays no regard to the company he is in."—CICERO, *De Oratore*, book II, section 4.

99, 19-20. I arrived at the country town at twilight. In order to catch the stagecoach, which at that time ran only between London and the larger English towns, Mr. Spectator is obliged to repair to a "country town" upon the stagecoach route.

99, 24. Mrs. Betty Arable. "Mrs.," pronounced "mistress," was formerly applied to unmarried as well as to married women, "Miss" being reserved for very young girls. Both "Mrs." and "Miss" are abbreviations of the word "mistress."

99, 25-26. Who took a place because they were to go. The effrontery which the captain afterwards offers the ladies is thus seen to have been premeditated.

99, 28. Ephraim: a name frequently assumed by the Quakers because "the children of Ephraim" are said, in *Psalms LXXVIII*, verse 9, to have "turned back in the day of battle." The Quakers were, of course, opposed to warfare of every sort.

100, 12. Half-pike. Pikes were formerly carried in a regiment of infantry by private soldiers as well as by captains. Ben Jonson trailed a pike in the Low Countries. In Addison's time privates were equipped with bayonets, and only officers carried pikes, which, moreover, were shorter than those formerly used and therefore called "half-pikes."

100, 14. **Equipage**: a collective noun which properly means a troop of attendants but which is here satirically applied to a single attendant.

100, 18. **Invidious**: detestable.

100, 22-23. **Sat with that dislike which people not too good-natured usually conceive of each other at first sight.** In the fiction of the eighteenth century many dramatic situations arise from the enforced proximity of strangers on a stagecoach journey.

101, 3. **Fall asleep**: in pretense, not in reality.

101, 28. **Flee at**: sneer at.

101, 34. **Hasped up**: cooped up. A "hasp" is the clasp used with a padlock, and the phrase literally means "locked up."

102, 8. **Smoky**: suspicious. Another example of eighteenth-century slang. Compare the note to 93, 29.

102, 15-16. **Our reckonings, apartments, and accommodation.** Since it took three days to make the journey from Worcester to London and since the coach never traveled by night, such matters as these had to be taken into account.

102, 18-20. **The right we had of taking place as going to London of all vehicles coming from thence**: that is, coaches going to London had the right of way over those coming from London. Owing to the deep ruts and heavy mud which lined the road on both sides, there was not room enough in the middle for two coaches to pass one another.

102, 34. **His** refers to "man."

103, 8. **Thee and I.** The use of the objective "thee" in place of the nominative "thou" is a characteristic of Quaker speech. Though commonly regarded as ungrammatical, it is no more so than our use in the plural of the objective "you" in place of the nominative "ye."

### QUESTIONS

1. What three persons engage in the dispute that takes place in the stagecoach? What is the occasion of the dispute?

2. Does Steele describe these three persons as individuals or as representatives of certain types or classes of society?

3. Would you expect Addison to describe these three characters in the same way that Steele describes them? What would have been the difference?

4. Why should we object to the moral tag at the end of this little narrative? Does Steele limit his love of moralizing to the parting advice which the Quaker gives the recruiting officer or does he allow it to appear in earlier portions of the paper as well?

#### XXIV. SIR ROGER AND SIR ANDREW IN ARGUMENT

The easy victory which Sir Andrew wins from Sir Roger clearly indicates on which side of the argument Steele's sympathies lay. As already observed (note to 10, 31), the Whig affiliations of the author would naturally dispose him to favor the merchants of the city as against the squires of the country. It is worthy of note that the argument in question is not brought into chronological harmony with Mr. Spectator's return to London, since it is said to have occurred at a meeting of the club held "last winter" (104, 4) and therefore during a former visit of Sir Roger in London, prior to his reception of Mr. Spectator at Coverley Hall.

(Motto).

"The whole debate in memory I retain,  
When Thyrsis argued warmly but in vain."

VIRGIL, *Eclogue VII*, verse 69.

103, 21. The old Roman fable: the revolt of the minor members of the body against the belly, told by Livy, *History of Rome*, book II, chapter xxxii, and, later, by Shakespeare, *Coriolanus*, act I, scene i, verses 99 and following.

104, 8-9. Carthaginian faith: a phrase first used by the Romans to characterize the perfidy of the Carthaginians.

104, 15. Cozenage: trickery.

105, 5. Carmen: cart-drivers.

105, 7-8. In their respective motions: in the pursuit of their respective callings.

106, 6: Break: fail.

107, 2. Assurance: insurance.

107, 2-3. The custom to the queen: the customs or import duties.

108, 5-6. His descent from the maid of honor: a reference, of course, to the merchant whose picture hung among the Coverley portraits but whose blood relationship to the family was indignantly denied by Sir Roger. See 40, 32-41, 6.

## QUESTIONS

1. What is the subject of the debate between Sir Roger and Sir Andrew? Which side does each disputant espouse?
2. Does the "old Roman fable" form a fitting introduction to the subject of the debate? If so, in what way?
3. Can you pick any flaws in the arguments advanced by Sir Roger against the merchant class?
4. Does Captain Sentry prove himself altogether tactful in his attempts to put an end to the debate? If not, why not?
5. Does Sir Andrew in his defense of the "trading interest" ever take unfair advantage of Sir Roger? If so, in what respects does he do so?
6. Does Steele's treatment of the animosity between the landed gentry and the trading class betray more or less bias than Addison's treatment of the opposition between the Whigs and Tories in Nos. XIX and XX? Give reasons for your answer?

## XXV. SIR ROGER VISITS LONDON

This paper, like the earlier paper upon Mr. Spectator's decision to return to London (No. XXII), is a transitional paper. As the former paper terminated the series of seventeen papers that dealt with Mr. Spectator's experience at Coverley Hall, so this paper opens the series of seven papers that deal with Sir Roger's doings in London. It is to be observed that, whereas Steele wrote three out of the seventeen papers in the earlier series, none of the papers in this later series is by his hand. It would thus appear that as time went on Addison came to regard Sir Roger as his own peculiar property and to feel less and less disposed to allow Steele to take a hand in the series that record his adventures. This inference is further borne out by the facetious remark which Addison once made to a friend with regard to the death of Sir Roger in the last *de Coverley* paper. "I'll kill [him]," he said, "that nobody else may murder him." (Motto).

"Most rare is now our old simplicity."

OVID, *Art of Love*, book I, verses 241-242.

108, 23. Gray's Inn Walks. The walks and gardens of Gray's Inn (9, 6-7) were a fashionable promenade on summer evenings.

**109, 2. Prince Eugene:** Eugene of Savoy (1663-1736), a famous Austrian general, who served as an ally of Marlborough in the war against France. The Tories, who had come into power in 1710, looked with disfavor upon the continuance of the war and, on December 31, 1711, recalled Marlborough from the field. Shortly after—just three days before the publication of this paper—Prince Eugene came to England upon a futile attempt to urge the continuance of the war and the restoration of Marlborough to command.

**109, 7. Eugenio:** Prince Eugene frequently signed himself "Eugenio von Savoye."

**109, 8. Scanderberg:** properly Scanderbeg, a corruption of Iskender Bey (Prince Alexander), the name under which George Castriota (1403-1467), a noted Albanian chief, was known to his enemies, the Turks.

**109, 26-27. Incomparable sermon out of Doctor Barrow.** See the note to 29, 31.

**109, 29. Thirty marks:** twenty pounds. A mark, like a guinea, was not an actual coin but a mere standard of value, representing thirteen shillings fourpence.

**109, 33. Tobacco stopper:** a small plug, made of wood or bone, to pack the tobacco in the bowl of a pipe.

**110, 5. Taken the law of him.** See note to 75, 9.

**110, 18. Chines:** dishes made of the backbone of the hogs.

**110, 29. Small beer:** a beer so called because it was weak, not because it was served in small glasses.

**110, 34. Smutting:** soiling one another's clothes with dirty hands.

**III, 5-6. The late Act of Parliament for securing the Church of England.** This Act, passed by a Tory parliament in 1711, was aimed against the Dissenters. It was designed to reinforce the Test Act, passed in 1673. The Test Act was so called because it imposed as a requirement or "test" for holding a civil office that one should receive the sacrament according to the forms of the Church of England. But many Dissenters had proved willing to "occasionally conform" to this requirement in order to obtain office. The present Act was accordingly passed in order to put an end to this practice of "occasional conformity" by forbidding anyone who had ever attended a conventicle, or Dissenters' meeting, from holding any office under the government.

III, 10. **Plum-porridge:** extreme Dissenters objected to all Christmas festivities as smacking of Romish idolatry.

III, 19. **The Pope's Procession.** November 17, the anniversary of the accession of Queen Elizabeth, had long been celebrated by a parade in which an effigy of the Pope was burned. An unusually impressive celebration of this anniversary had been planned for the preceding November by the Whigs on account of the expected return of Marlborough; but the Tory authorities, with whom Marlborough was not in favor, had gotten wind of the plan and caused the preparations to be suppressed.

III, 30. **Baker's Chronicle.** See note to 20, 23.

III, 32. **Redound to the honor of this prince.** Addison is here in error. Since Baker published his *Chronicle* in 1643 he could not have made mention of Prince Eugene, who was not born until 1663.

III, 2. **Squire's:** a coffee-house kept by a man named Squire. It was situated near Gray's Inn and was frequented by lawyers.

III, 9. **The Supplement:** an independent newspaper of that name, issued Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays, and not a "supplement" or "extra edition" of another paper.

III, 10. **The boys:** the waiters. The French word "garçon" means either a boy or a waiter.

### QUESTIONS

1. As a transitional paper, intended merely to connect what has gone before with what comes afterwards, the present paper records no new events. Nevertheless Addison is not at a loss for material with which to fill the paper. Of what subject-matter does he avail himself for this purpose?

2. Can you give any reasons why Mr. Spectator should not entertain Sir Roger at his own lodgings in return for the hospitality he has received at Coverley Hall?

3. What several items of news does Sir Roger relate to Mr. Spectator at Gray's Inn Walks?

4. Which of these items of news might have proved distasteful to a man of Mr. Spectator's political views? In what spirit does Mr. Spectator receive them? Would Sir Andrew have received them in the same spirit? Why not?

## XXVI. PIN-MONEY

The present paper, like that upon "Leonora's Library" (No. IV), belongs to the large class of *Spectators* in which, with inimitably light and playful touch, Addison satirizes all forms of feminine folly and affectation. As, in the foregoing paper, he ridiculed the "learned lady" and as, in the present paper, he pokes fun at the "extravagant lady," so in other papers, which lie outside the *de Coverley* series, he is good-naturedly jocose at the expense of the high head-dress, the "hoop" petticoat, the fan with "gilded cupids," and the bursts of patches with which ladies were accustomed to adorn either the right or the left cheek according to the Whig or Tory sympathies of the wearer. In fact in a very early number of the *Spectator* Addison had already given evidence of a desire to supply papers of the type under consideration. In *Spectator* No. 10 he writes: "But there are none to whom this paper will be more useful than to the female world. I have often thought there has not been sufficient pains taken in finding out proper employments and diversions for the fair ones. Their amusements seem contrived for them rather as they are women than as they are reasonable creatures; and are more adapted to the sex than to the species. The toilet is their great scene of business, and the right adjusting of their hair the principal employment of their lives. The sorting of a suit of ribands is reckoned a very good morning's work; and if they make an excursion to a mercer's or a toy-shop, so great a fatigue makes them unfit for anything else all the day after." As in the paper upon *Leonora's Library*, a casual allusion to Sir Roger supplies a sufficient excuse for including this second example of a type of paper unmatched for delicate irony in the entire compass of our literature.

(Motto).

"But womankind, that never knows a mean,  
Down to the dregs their sinking fortunes drain;  
Hourly they give, and spend, and waste, and wear,  
And think no pleasure can be bought too dear."

—JUVENAL, *Satire VI*, verses 362-365.

112, 15. I am turned of my great climacteric: that is, "I am passed sixty-three," a year in which some great change was supposed to take place in one's health or fortune. Mr. Fribble means to say that he is now beyond the vicissitudes of earthly fortune.



113, 23. **Grotius:** Hugo Grotius (1583-1645), a famous Dutch jurist.

113, 23. **Pufendorf:** Samuel Pufendorf (1632-1694), a German jurist.

113, 23. **Civilians:** students of the Roman or civil law.

113, 25. **Josiah Fribble, Esq.** The ludicrous name of the writer of this letter, as well as the delicate play of Addisonian humor evident in the letter itself, indicates that Mr. Fribble was not one of the real persons to whom, as remarked in the note to 7, 17, Mr. Spectator was occasionally indebted for correspondence.

114, 13. **Head:** a pun upon the word "head," which is here used in the double sense of the "head" of a pin and the "head," or topic, of a discourse.

114, 23. **Groat:** an English silver coin of the nominal value of fourpence. The lady is supposed to spend £400 a year upon pins. If one groat will buy 365 pins, £400 would obviously buy 8,760,000 pins. The discrepancy between this result and the 8,640,000 mentioned by Addison is evidently due, not to Addison's faulty arithmetic, but to the fact that a groat was worth something less than fourpence.

115, 3. **Churl:** a niggard.

115, 5. **Alimony:** the allowance paid to a woman by her former husband after separation.

116, 7. **Socrates in Plato's Alcibiades.** In his dialogue entitled *Alcibiades*, the Greek philosopher Plato represents his master Socrates as repeating this story. The story, which Addison translates quite literally, may be found in Jowett's translation of Plato's *Dialogues*, volume II, page 490 (the Macmillan Company, New York, 1892).

#### QUESTIONS

1. Is not this paper calculated to offend Mr. Spectator's female readers? If so, how could he hope to make such a paper "useful to the female world"?

2. Should you judge that Mr. Spectator is unduly severe in his strictures upon the extravagance of the women of his day?

3. Point out any resemblances or differences between this paper and the paper upon *A Lady's Library* (No. IV).

## XXVII. SIR ROGER IN WESTMINSTER ABBEY

No other *de Coverley* paper contains so characteristic a delineation of Sir Roger as the present one. If all the other papers in the series were missing, this single paper would still be enough to immortalize the name of the Worcestershire knight. The delightful simplicity of Sir Roger is nowhere better illustrated than in his remark that "the two coronation chairs" would afford Will Wimble a good opportunity to carve a tobacco-stopper. But in spite of the humorous irrelevancy of this observation, Sir Roger is a genuine patriot at heart and the concluding invitation which he extends to his guide to visit him at his lodgings and "talk over there matters more at leisure" indicates that he has been duly impressed with what he has seen there.

(Motto).

"With Ancus and with Numa, kings of Rome,  
We must descend into the silent tomb."

HORACE, *Epistles*, book I, epistle VI, verse 27.

117, 5-6. My paper upon Westminster Abbey: *Spectator* No. 26.

117, 20. The Widow Trueby's water: a patent "strong water" which, like certain temperance drinks of to-day, owed its popularity to the fact that it was considerably less harmless than it seemed.

118, 10-11. The sickness being at Dantzic: the great plague there in 1709.

118, 13. Hackney-coach. See note to 94, 29.

119, 10. Sir Cloudesley Shovel: a gallant English admiral drowned off the Scilly Isles in 1707.

119, 12. Busby's Tomb: Richard Busby (1606-1695), for fifty-five years headmaster of Westminster school. He was a severe but successful disciplinarian and used to say that "the rod was his sieve and that whoever could not pass through that was no boy for him."

119, 17-18. The little chapel on the right: St. Edmund's, on the south aisle of the choir. The chapel was named after St. Edmund, King of the East Anglians (840-870).

119, 20-21. The lord who had cut off the King of Morocco's head. This inscription formerly stood over the tomb of Sir Bernard Brocas, beheaded on Tower Hill, in 1399.

119, 23. Cecil upon his knees. William Cecil (1520-1598),

Lord Burleigh, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth. He is represented "on his knees" at the magnificent tomb of his wife and daughter. This tomb, however, is not in St. Edmund's chapel, but in the adjoining chapel of St. Nicholas.

119, 25-26. Who died by the prick of a needle. This story was formerly told of Lady Elizabeth Russell, whose tomb is in St. Edmund's chapel. She is represented as pointing her forefinger at a death's head on the pedestal at her feet.

119, 32. The two coronation chairs. They are in the chapel of Edward the Confessor, which forms the East end of the choir. One chair is said to have belonged to Edward I; in it every English king has been crowned ever since. The other chair was made for Queen Mary, when she was crowned with her husband, William III.

119, 33-120, 1. The stone . . . brought from Scotland: a block of sandstone brought from Scone to Westminster Abbey by Edward I in 1296. Formerly most of the early Scottish kings had been crowned upon it. The stone is now fittingly placed beneath the old coronation chair of Edward I.

120, 6. Pay his forfeit: an admirable satire upon the guide who makes use of his avarice to conceal his ignorance.

120, 7. Trepanned: caught.

120, 13-14. Edward the Third's sword. It stands between the two coronation chairs.

120, 15. The Black Prince: Edward, the eldest son of Edward III, who died before his father in 1376. He is buried, not in the Abbey, but in the cathedral at Canterbury.

120, 21. Touched for the evil: scrofula, called "king's evil" because supposed to be cured by the touch of the legitimate sovereign. Queen Anne, the last English sovereign to ascend the throne by right of descent as distinguished from Act of Parliament, was likewise the last sovereign who "touched" for the evil.

120, 25-26. One of our English kings without an head: Henry V. The head, which was of solid silver, was stolen by misguided Puritans in the reign of Henry VIII.

120, 32. Knight: As a baronet (7, 25), Sir Roger was necessarily a "knight." Every baronet is a knight but not every knight is a baronet.

121, 12-13. His lodgings in Norfolk Buildings. See the note to 8, 11.

## QUESTIONS

1. What was the nature of Baker's *Chronicle*? (See the note to 20, 23.) Why does Sir Roger refer so often to this work in the present paper?

2. Is Sir Roger an intelligent observer of the monuments in Westminster Abbey? Is it the important or the unimportant details that excite his chief interest?

3. In what ways does Sir Roger give expression to the patriotic emotions with which he is inspired during his visit to the Abbey?

4. In what former paper (outside of the *de Coverley* series) has Addison described Westminster Abbey? (See the note to 117, 5-6.) Read this paper in connection with the present one.

## XXVIII. SIR ROGER UPON BEARDS

This paper, as well as the paper upon the Coverley Hunt (No. XIII), is written by Eustace Budgell, the young friend and kinsman of Addison. Budgell imitated the style of Addison so skilfully that it is difficult to distinguish his contributions from those of his master. Both the exquisite humor of this paper as well as the skill displayed in making much out of little are traits characteristic of Addison.

(Motto).

"Holds out his foolish beard for thee to pluck."

—PERSIUS, *Satire II*, verse 28.

121, 26. Smock-faced: womanish-looking.

122, 12. Lucian: a famous Greek satirist (120-180).

122, 17. *Ælian*: Claudius *Ælianus*, a Roman rhetorician of the second century after Christ. The anecdote referred to occurs in his *Various History*, book XI, chapter 10.

122, 17. *Zoilus*: a Greek grammarian of the fourth century before Christ, surnamed "*Homeromastix*" or the "*Scourge of Homer*" from his bitter criticism of that author.

122, 28. In his effigies before the book: in his likeness, as frontispiece, on the title-page of the book.

123, 4. *Don Quevedo*: Francisco de Quevedo (1580-1645), a famous Spanish satirist.

123, 17-18. *Cardinal Pole*: Reginald Pole (1500-1558), a famous English Roman Catholic prelate and an active persecutor of the Protestants in the reign of "Bloody" Queen Mary. He

was first made an English cardinal and afterwards, under Mary, Archbishop of Canterbury.

123, 18. **Bishop Gardiner:** Stephen Gardiner (1493-1555), like Cardinal Pole, an English Roman Catholic prelate and persecutor of the Protestants under Mary.

123, 27. **Hudibras:** the hero of a famous satire against the Puritans, likewise entitled *Hudibras*, by Samuel Butler (1612-1680). The lines occur in part I, canto I, verses 241-246.

124, 13-14. **Æsculapius:** the Greek god of medicine and the art of healing.

### QUESTIONS

1. By what means is the subject of beards brought into relation with Sir Roger's visit in London?

2. What assertion does Mr. Spectator make with reference to beards? What several examples does he cite in support of the truth of this assertion?

3. What whimsical proposal does Mr. Spectator make in the final paragraph? Is it natural that he should have selected a proposal which has reference to horseback riding? (See No. XIII.)

### XXIX. SIR ROGER AT THE PLAY

Like the papers upon the *Coverley Portraits* (No. IX), *A Sunday with Sir Roger* (No. XI), and *Sir Roger at Westminster Abbey* (No. XXVII), the present paper is peculiarly successful in bringing out that quality of artless simplicity which is, perhaps, the most marked characteristic of Sir Roger. The surprise that the knight expresses when he finds that he can understand the conversation of the actors in the play, reminds us of the bravery of that ancestor who so narrowly escaped death at the battle of Worcester, the fashioning of a tobacco-stopper out of the coronation chairs at Westminster Abbey, and a number of other instances of an equally delicious naïveté.

(Motto).

"Keep Nature's great original in view,  
And thence the living images pursue."

HORACE, *Art of Poetry*, verses 317-318.

124, 25. **The new tragedy.** This is the play which Sir Roger attends and which is described in the present paper.

It is entitled the *Distressed Mother* and was written by Ambrose Philips (1675-1749), a popular but by no means remarkable dramatist of the day. The play was first acted at Drury Lane Theater on March 17, 1712, just eight days before the performance which Sir Roger is supposed to attend, and was supplied with a prologue by Steele and with an epilogue by Addison. The plot of the play was taken by Philips from that of the *Andromaque*, a play by Racine, the distinguished French dramatist. The play opens at Troy immediately after the destruction of that city by the Greeks and deals with the fortunes of Andromache, widow of Hector, the bravest of the Trojans. The Greek victor Pyrrhus, son of Achilles, has just captured Andromache and tries to induce her to marry him with the promise that her young son Astyanax shall become the future king of Troy. She yields a reluctant consent, being secretly resolved to kill herself before that event. The catastrophe of the tragedy is brought about in the following manner. Pyrrhus, it seems, is loved by the Greek maiden Hermione, who, enraged with jealousy because of his attentions to Andromache, incites the Greeks to revolt against him. The Greek warrior Orestes slays Pyrrhus and then goes mad; Hermione commits suicide; and Andromache is thus saved from the designs against her honor.

125, 1. **The Committee:** a comedy by Sir Robert Howard (1626-1698). It satirizes the Puritans and is therefore termed by Sir Roger "a good church of England comedy."

125, 10. **The Mohocks:** a band of dissolute young gentlemen who roamed the streets by night, playing mischievous tricks upon the weak and defenseless for the sake of their own amusement. One of their favorite pastimes was to roll old women downhill in hogsheads. They were particularly active during the month in which this paper was written, and many complaints were being made against them. See the *Spectator* Nos. 324, 332, and 347.

125, 27. **Norfolk Street.** See the note to 8, 11.

125, 32. **That we may be at the house before it is full.** See note to 9, 33.

126, 3-4. **The battle of Steenkirk:** a battle in which the English were defeated by the French near Steenkirk, a small town in Belgium, on August 3, 1692. A "steenkirk" was the name afterward applied to a loose, negligé style of cravat made in Paris and so named out of compliment to the French soldiers

who, in their eagerness for battle, did not stop to array themselves in careful military attire.

126, 6. Plants: cudgels.

127, 3. **Pyrrhus his threatening:** Pyrrhus's threatening. In and before the eighteenth century, "his" was often used instead of "s" as a sign of the genitive or possessive case of the noun. The word, though written like the pronoun, was never pronounced "his," but either "s" or "es."

127, 28. **Baggage.** See the note to 93, 29.

128, 1. **Pylades:** bosom friend of Orestes. Like the phrases "David and Jonathan" and "Damon and Pythias," the phrase "Orestes and Pylades" is used to describe a very close intimacy between friends.

128, 4-5. **The old fellow in whiskers:** Phœnix, counsellor to Pyrrhus. Altogether he speaks about sixty-five verses in the play.

128, 8. **Smoke the knight:** make fun of the knight by asking him ridiculous questions. Another instance of eighteenth-century slang. See the note to 93, 29.

128, 13-14. **It was not done upon the stage.** As Addison very well knew, but Sir Roger did not, it was a cardinal maxim in Greek tragedy that murders should never be performed upon the stage. In this English play, which was, of course, ultimately derived from the Greek, the convention is still observed.

### QUESTIONS

1. Why did Addison select the *Distressed Mother* as the particular play for Sir Roger to witness?

2. What characteristic of Sir Roger has Mr. Spectator in mind when he represents him as standing up to observe the audience at this play? On what previous occasion has he represented Sir Roger as performing the same operation at a public assembly?

3. To what peculiarity of tragic diction has Addison reference when he represents Sir Roger as asking the question, "Should your people in tragedy always talk to be understood?"

4. Read in connection with Sir Roger's criticism of the *Distressed Mother* the equally famous piece of "natural criticism" made by Partridge upon a performance of Hamlet in Fielding's *Tom Jones*, book XVI, chapter V.

## XXX. WILL HONEYCOMB AND THE LADIES

In this paper Budgell again assumes the rôle of Mr. Spectator. Although this is only his third contribution to the *Sir Roger* series, he nevertheless exhibits an acquaintance with earlier papers in the series which would have done justice to one who, like Steele and Addison, had been a regular contributor from the beginning. The references herein contained to Sir Roger's relations to the widow harmonize most accurately with Steele's treatment of this topic in Nos. XII and XV.

(Motto).

"Lions the wolves, wolves the kids pursue,  
The kids, sweet thyme—and still I follow you."

—VIRGIL, *Eclogue II*, verses 63-64.

130, 5. **Amours.** Notice how consistently Will Honeycomb plays the part of the old beau. See introductory comment to No. II.

130, 16. **The old put:** the old fool. A further example of eighteenth-century slang. See the notes to 93, 29, and 128, 8.

130, 23-24. **Her attorney in Lyon's Inn.** It is evident that the widow's attorney could not have been a particularly distinguished member of the bar, for he belonged to Lyon's Inn, one of the minor legal societies, known as Inns of Chancery, whence one might be advanced to one of the major legal societies, known as Inns of Court. This somewhat slighting allusion to the professional status of the widow's legal adviser is not, of course, intended as an altogether unmixed compliment to the widow herself.

131, 3. **Miss Jenny.** The epithet "Miss," in contrast to the more dignified "Mistress," is used by Will Honeycomb with a tinge of contempt, to signify his vexation at losing the lady. See the note to 99, 22.

131, 9-10. **Such a spindle pair of legs as Mr. Honeycomb.** A sudden humorous sally in which Budgell shows himself an apt pupil of his master Addison.

131, 26-27. **The book I had considered last Saturday:** the tenth book of *Paradise Lost*, "considered" by Addison in *Spectator* No. 357. The advantage which Budgell here takes of a recent paper contributed to the *Spectator* not by himself but by Addison is but another example of the skill with which he manages to fit his own paper into a series mainly written by others.



131, 28. *Milton*. Addison was a diligent student of Milton and contributed to the *Spectator* a series of critical papers upon *Paradise Lost* which, in spite of minor defects, not only delighted his own age, but still serves as an inspiration to present-day readers of that great poem.

132, 20-21. Told us that he would read over these verses again before he went to bed. One of the most striking peculiarities of Sir Roger is the length of time it takes him to grasp a new idea. This trait is illustrated by his desire to "read over" the verses of Milton in his own apartment as well as by the invitation which he extended to his guide to talk over the sights of Westminster Abbey with him "more at leisure" in his own lodgings (121, 12-14). This extreme deliberateness is a marked characteristic of the English country squire, who has always been a rather heavy, dull-witted individual, slow to receive impressions to which he is not accustomed.

#### QUESTIONS

1. Name the several members of Mr. Spectator's club. Was Will Honeycomb among them?
2. In what earlier *de Coverley* paper were these members described? What was there said of the character of Will Honeycomb?
3. Enumerate the several love experiences of Will Honeycomb. Do these experiences harmonize with what has previously been said of Will Honeycomb's character? In what respects?

#### XXXI. SIR ROGER AT VAUXHALL

In this paper Addison brings to an end his account of the experiences of Sir Roger in London. Like the papers mentioned in the introductory comment to No. XXIX, the present paper abounds in those exhibitions of artless simplicity which make Sir Roger one of the most delightfully humorous creations in all literature. His remark to the effect that "church work is slow, church work is slow," uttered with the deliberate emphasis of one who has something new to impart, will last as long as the English language.

(Motto).

"A beauteous garden, but by vice maintained."

JUVENAL, *Satire I*, verse 75.

133, 2. **Spring Garden**: also called Vauxhall or Fox-hall (133, 28). This was a famous eighteenth-century pleasure garden in which people gathered for music, refreshments, and social intercourse. Vauxhall was situated on the south side of the Thames near the present Vauxhall Bridge. It was first opened in 1661 and finally closed in 1857.

133, 12. **The Temple Stairs**: the boat landing nearest Sir Roger's lodgings in Norfolk Street.

133, 23. **My livery**. See the note to 33, 32-33.

133, 28. **Fox-hall**. See the note to 133, 2.

133, 30. **La Hogue**. The combined Dutch and English fleets defeated the French fleet in an engagement off Cape La Hogue, on the northwest coast of France, on May 19, 1692.

134, 3. **London Bridge**: the most easterly of the three bridges that spanned the Thames in Addison's day. There are now nine such bridges.

134, 4. **The seven wonders of the world**. These are: the Egyptian pyramids, the mausoleum at Halicarnassus, the Temple of Artemis at Ephesus, the hanging gardens of Babylon, the Statue of Zeus at Olympia, the Colossus at Rhodes, and the Pharos, or lighthouse, at Alexandria.

134, 11. **Temple Bar**: a gateway which divided Fleet Street which lay to the east, from the Strand, which lay to the west, and separated the business section of London, known as the "city," in which Sir Roger's Norfolk lodgings were situated, from the more fashionable section of London to the west, in which Vauxhall was located. As Sir Roger passes westward in his boat upon the Thames, he observes the contrast between the large number of churches in the former section of London, in which he embarked, and the scarcity of churches in the latter section of the city, past which he is just now journeying on his way to Vauxhall.

134, 13. **The fifty new churches**: granted by an Act of the Tory Parliament in the preceding year.

134, 23. **Knight of the shire**. See the note to 41, 16.

134, 30. **Old put**. See the note to 130, 16.

134, 31-32. **Thames ribaldry**: the coarse language characteristic of Thames boatmen.

134, 34. **Middlesex justice**: instead of being, as he is, a

Worcestershire justice (7, 24-25; 9, 1). Middlesex is the county in which London is situated.

135, 4. At this time of year: that is, towards the end of May, when this paper was written.

135, 8. Mohametan paradise, because the chief attraction of the Mohametan heaven are the "black-eyed" houris, whose beauty, Addison might have added, unlike that of the women at Vauxhall, never grows old.

135, 17. A mask: one whose face was disguised in a mask.

135, 22. A wanton baggage: a dissolute young flirt. See the note to 93, 29.

135, 33. A member of the quorum. See the note to 9, 1.

136, 3. Strumpets: loose women.

### QUESTIONS

1. What characteristic of Mr. Spectator, mentioned in the introductory description of that gentleman in the first *de Coverley* paper, is twice alluded to in the present paper?

2. What act of benevolence does Sir Roger perform on his way to Vauxhall? On what previous occasion has he performed a similar act of charity?

3. By what remarks does Sir Roger betray his simplemindedness and ignorance of the world? On what previous occasions has he made similarly ingenuous remarks?

4. By what observations does Sir Roger reveal his love of country? On what previous occasions has he revealed a similarly patriotic disposition?

5. On what two occasions is Sir Roger insulted? Does he show himself capable of self-protection on these occasions or is he obliged to rely upon Mr. Spectator for aid?

### XXXII. DEATH OF SIR ROGER

By the time that this paper was written, Steele and Addison had decided to bring the *Spectator* to a conclusion. Accordingly, in the present paper Addison makes an end of Sir Roger, and in this and in the papers that follow disposes in turn of each of the surviving members of the club. Thus in the present paper Captain Sentry retires to Sir Roger's estate; in No. 530 Will Honeycomb forsakes the club to marry a farmer's daughter; in No. 541 the Templar abandons his club associates to

return to the study of law; in No. 549 Sir Andrew Freeport withdraws from business to devote his remaining days to charity; and in No. 550 the clergyman is reported dead. Thus Mr. Spectator remains the sole member of the club, and in No. 555 he, too, makes his final bow to the reader.

(Motto).

"Mirror of ancient faith!

Undaunted worth! Inviolable truth!"

—VIRGIL, *Æneid*, book VI, verse 878.

136, 12. County sessions. See the note to 75, 7.

136, 17. Captain Sentry. As we afterwards learn (138, 3-9), he is Sir Roger's nephew and heir and would, therefore, naturally be on hand at Coverley Hall at the death of his uncle.

137, 25. Frieze: a heavy woolen material.

137, 42-138, 1. Six of the quorum. See the note to 9, 1.

138, 9. Quit-rents: a rent which one pays in order to get "quit" or free of other services.

138, 24-25. Manner of writing it. The butler's English is by no means as poor as Mr. Spectator would have us believe. Although an uneducated man and writing under a severe emotional strain, he makes but few mistakes. Pick out these mistakes and correct them.

138, 29. The Act of Uniformity. An Act which would naturally please a Tory like Sir Roger because it provided that a clergyman should be deprived of his office unless he were willing to assent to everything in the *Book of Common Prayer*.

138, 37. Rings and mourning. It was customary in Addison's day for a man about to die to leave by will rings, gloves, and hatbands to be worn by the mourners at his funeral.

### QUESTIONS

1. In Greek tragedy the actors were killed off the stage. Apply this principle to the death of Sir Roger.

2. Who informs Mr. Spectator of Sir Roger's death? Why should this particular person have been chosen to communicate the news to Mr. Spectator?

3. In what respects may Sir Roger be said to have departed this life in the same spirit that he had lived it?

4. To what several persons does Sir Roger bequeath his property and what does he give to each? Which of these be-

quests came as the fulfilment of promises made to the recipients beforehand?

5. Which one of Sir Roger's club associates might we expect to be least affected by the news of his death? Is this expectation realized? If not, why not?





# English Readings for Schools

WILBUR L. CROSS, Yale University, General Editor

Addison: Sir Roger de Coverley Papers.

Edited by NATHANIEL E. GRIFFIN, Princeton University.

Arnold: Sohrab and Rustum, and Other Poems.

Edited by WALTER S. HINCHMAN, Groton School. 25 cents.

Ballads.

Edited by GUIDO H. STEMPEL, Indiana University.

Browning: Selections.

Edited by CHARLES W. HODELL, Goucher College. 30 cents.

Bunyan: Pilgrim's Progress, Part I.

Edited by JOHN H. GARDINER. 40 cents.

Burke: On Conciliation.

Edited by D. V. THOMPSON, Lawrenceville School. 25 cents.

Byron: Childe Harold, and Other Poems.

Edited by HARDIN CRAIG, University of Minnesota. 35 cents.

Carlyle: Essay on Burns.

Edited by SOPHIE C. HART, Wellesley College. 25 cents.

Defoe: Robinson Crusoe.

Edited by WILBUR L. CROSS, Yale University. 45 cents.

Dickens: Tale of Two Cities.

Edited by E. H. KEMPER MCCOMB, Manual Training High School, Indianapolis, Ind. 45 cents.

Eliot: Silas Marner.

Edited by ELLEN E. GARRIGUES, De Witt Clinton High School, New York City. 30 cents.

English Lyrics from Dryden to Burns.

Edited by MORRIS W. CROLL, Princeton University. 30 cents.

Essays.

Edited by C. T. WINCHESTER, Wesleyan University.

Franklin: Autobiography.

Edited by F. W. PINE, Gilman Country School, Baltimore. 35 cents.

Hughes: Tom Brown's School Days.

Edited by W. H. LILLARD, Phillips Andover Academy. 45 cents.

Huxley: Selections.

Edited by C. ALPHONSO SMITH, University of Virginia. 35 cents.

Irving: Sketch Book.

Edited by ARTHUR W. LEONARD, Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass. 40 cents.

Macaulay: Life of Johnson.

Edited by C. N. GREENOUGH, Harvard University. 25 cents.

Macaulay: Lord Clive and Warren Hastings.

Edited by F. E. PIERCE, Yale University, and SAMUEL THURBER, Jr., Technical High School, Newton, Mass. 35 cents.



**English Readings for Schools—Continued**

**Macaulay: Two Speeches on Copyright, with Lincoln: Speech at Cooper Institute.** Edited by JAMES F. HOSIC, Chicago Teachers College.

**Milton: L'Allegro, Il Penseroso, Comus, Lycidas.** Edited by M. W. SAMPSON, Cornell University. 25 cents.

**Old Testament Narratives.** Edited by G. H. NETTLETON, Yale University. 40 cents.

**Scott: Quentin Durward.** Edited by THOMAS H. BRIGGS. 45 cents.

**Scott: Ivanhoe.** Edited by ALFRED A. MAY, High School of Commerce, New York City. 45 cents.

**Scott: Lady of the Lake.** Edited by ALFRED M. HITCHCOCK, Public High School, Hartford, Conn. 30 cents.

**Shakespeare: Macbeth.** Edited by F. E. SCHELLING, University of Pennsylvania. 25 cents.

**Shakespeare: Merchant of Venice.** Edited by FREDERICK E. PIERCE, Yale University. 25 cents.

**Shakespeare: Julius Cæsar.** Edited by A. H. THORNDIKE, Columbia University. 25 cents.

**Shakespeare: As You Like It.** Edited by JOHN W. CUNLIFFE, Columbia University, and GEORGE ROY ELLIOTT, Bowdoin College. 25 cents.

**Shakespeare: Hamlet.** Edited by JOHN L. LOWES, Washington University.

**Short Stories.** Edited by STUART P. SHERMAN, University of Illinois.

**Stevenson: Inland Voyage and Travels with a Donkey.** Edited by EDWARD MIMS, Vanderbilt University. 35 cents.

**Stevenson: Treasure Island.** Edited by S. P. SHERMAN, University of Illinois. 30 cents.

**Tennyson: Idylls of the King.** Edited by JOHN ERSKINE, Columbia University. 30 cents.

**Washington: Farewell Address, with Webster: First Bunker Hill Oration.** Edited by WILLIAM E. SIMONDS, Knox College, Galesburg, Ill. 25 cents.

**Wordsworth: Selections.** Also from Coleridge, Shelley and Keats. Edited by JAMES W. LINN, University of Chicago. 35 cents.

**HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY, PUBLISHERS  
NEW YORK**







“Reading  
maketh a full  
man, conference  
a ready man,  
and writing an  
exact man.”

*Bacon.*

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

16446.32.29

The Sir Roger de Coverley papers,  
Widener Library

002736042



3 2044 086 771 680